

**HISTORY OF
FORT BEND COUNTY**

SOWELL





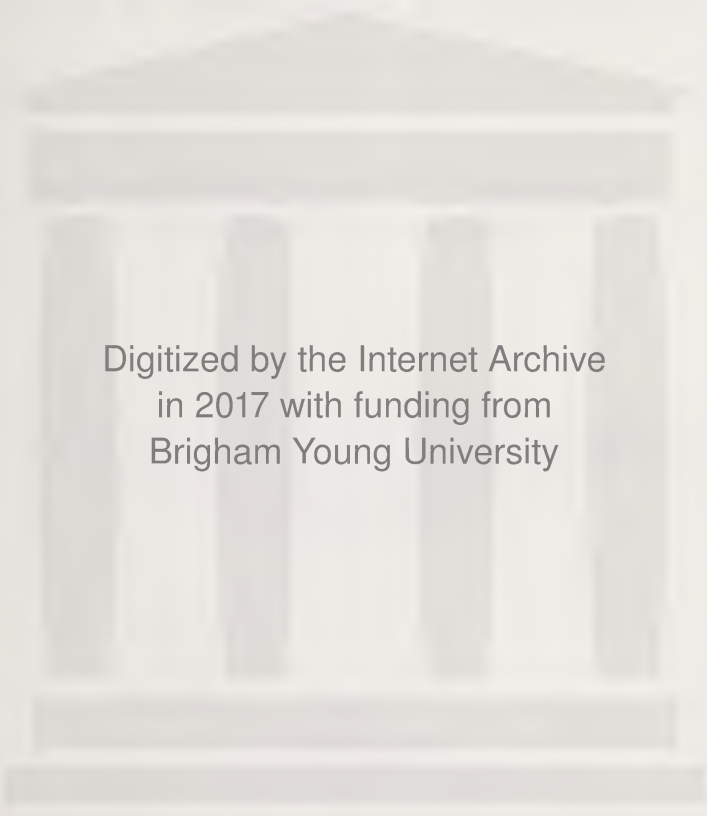
LIBRARY
Brigham Young University



GIFT OF
Mr. & Mrs.
Otto F. Carl

IN MEMORY OF

William P. Knecht



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Brigham Young University



F
392
.F7
S8

HISTORY

OF

FORT BEND COUNTY

CONTAINING BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF
MANY NOTED CHARACTERS

GENERAL M. B. LAMAR, PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF TEXAS; MRS. JANE LONG,
CALLED THE "MOTHER OF TEXAS"; "DEAF SMITH" THE FAMOUS SPY AND
SCOUT; THE BORDENS, PRINTERS, SOLDIERS AND INVENTORS:
MIRR PRISONERS, SANTA FE PRISONERS AND SOME
OF FANNIN'S MEN, ALL OF WHOM ARE
BURIED IN THE CEMETERY
AT RICHMOND

BY

A. J. SOWELL

AUTHOR OF "EARLY SETTLERS OF SOUTHWEST TEXAS," ETC.

HOUSTON, TEXAS

W. H. COYLE & CO., STATIONERS AND PRINTERS

1904

HAROLD B. LEE LIBRARY
BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY
PROVO, UTAH

Special Contents

Copyright

1964

Printed in the United States of America

*A complete facsimile
from the press of*

*W. M. Morrison
Waco Texas*

Box 3277

1964

THE LIBRARY
BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY
PROVO, UTAH

INDEX.

	Page.
Austin, Moses	1
Austin, Stephen F.	2
Baker, Captain Mosley	108
Biography of the Author	v
Bordens, the Family of	166
Barnetts and Spencers	234
Business Men of Richmond	359
Billy Bowlegs, Seminole Chief	373
Calder, Captain R. J.	148
County Officers at Close of Civil War	361
Christman, Horatio	246
Cason, Henry	110
Davis, William Kinchen	205
Disposition of Mexican Prisoners	245
Davis, J. H. P.	206
Dyer, J. E.	210
Death of Randolph Foster	173
Damon's Mound	262
Darst, Abraham	341
Foster, Randolph	15
Fort Bend	xi
Fort Bend County Men, Co. F, 4th Texas, Killed, etc., in Civil War..	273
Fenn, John R.	87
Foster, Aunt Lucy	171
First Court Held in Fort Bend County	355
Fields, Col. W. D.	249
Facts About Fort Bend County	338
Falling of the County Bridge	344
Great Flood of 1899	333
Fossil Remains of a Great Animal.....	346
Great Storm of 1900	335
Estimated Loss by	336
Hunter, Dr. Johnson Calhoun	159
Hagan, Adam	248
Historical Bell	255
Historic Cannon	259

	Page.
Hibbered, Loran	264
Hodge, Robert	340
Introduction	ix
Incident of the Flood of 1899	333
Jones, Henry	52
Jones, Captain Randall	63
Jones, James and Hetty	60
Jones, Mrs. Julia	175
Jaybird Democratic Association	326
Long, General James, Expedition of	23
Lamar, General M. B.	112
Long Mrs. Jane H., Mother of Texas	36
Little, Walter W.	48
Land Titles Issued from 1824 to 1832	18
Mexican Account of the Battle of San Jacinto	122
Martin, Captain Wiley	109
Mier Expedition	183
Mier Prisoners and What Became of Them	212
Masonic Ruin	227
McKnabb, John, Santa Fe Prisoner	218
McElroy, Charles	241
Neel, Adam S.	240
Newell, John D.	109
"Old Whip," Horse Santa Anna Rode at San Jacinto.....	155
Pathetic Incident During the Invasion of 1836	169
Pleasants, George W.	243
Present County Officers	362
Ryon, Colonel William M.	208
Roster of the Terry Rangers	275
Rivers and Creeks of Fort Bend County	152
Richmond Bar	360
Railway Mileage	154
Smith, "Deaf"	69
Santa Anna's Army in Fort Bend County	83
Shipman's and Morton's	177
Smith, Thomas J., one of Fannin's men	229
Stafford, William	237
Sugarland—Colonel Cunningham's Plantation.....	348
Santa Fe Expedition	219
Sad Incident of the Great Storm	336
Terry Rangers from Fort Bend County	266
Wilkinson, General William M.	46
Waters' Plantation	352
Worthington, R. H.	340



A. J. SOWELL,
1904.

Biography of the Author

The material for this book being composed principally of biographies of pioneers, and my people being early colonists also, and myself inflicted by the Fates on the people of Fort Bend County, to write their history, by request I add a sketch of my people and self also. My father, Asa J. L. Sowell, came from Missouri to Texas with his parents, John and Rachel Sowell, in 1829, when but seven years of age, as a colonist under Green DeWitt, who settled Gonzales. Father was born in Tennessee near the "Hermitage," the residence of General Jackson, hence my first name of Andrew Jackson. Of the Sowell boys my father was the youngest of five brothers, the others being Andrew, Louis, William and John. There were two sisters, Sarah and Rachel. After the war with the Mexicans in 1836, my people, having lost their home and everything on it, when Gonzales was burned during the invasion of Santa Anna, moved to the great bend in the Guadalupe River, near the present town of Seguin, where the John Sowell league was located. They were the first settlers in Guadalupe County, and my grandmother was the fifth white woman to cross the San Marcos River.

My ancestors, the Sewells, were Highland Scots, and fought in the armies of Wallace and Bruce against King Edward of England, and in that of Cromwell against King Charles. In America they were arrayed under Washington against King George. At a very early day two

brothers settled on the Yadkin River, in North Carolina, from which sprang a large progeny, and in the war of 1776, being North Carolinians, helped to defeat the famous Tarleton and Simcoe cavalry at the battle of the "Cowpens." We were also related to the Champes of Virginia, and one of them, John Champe, during the War of the Revolution, penetrated the British lines with the intent of capturing General Benedict Arnold and bringing him to Washington's camp, but was prevented by a great storm which set in on the night he planned to carry out his rather desperate undertaking.

My people were pioneers and fought Indians under General Harrison at Tippecanoe, under General Jackson at the "Horseshoe," Tallahassee, Talledega, and the British at New Orleans. In Texas they were Rangers under Hays, McCulloch, Burleson and others, and in the various Indian battles in which they participated Louis, William and Joseph Sowell were killed. Joseph Sowell commanded a company of Rangers, and was killed in a fight in Fannin County. His son, John Sowell, was captured by the Comanches and kept three years.

My mother, Mary Turner, daughter of Maj. William S. Turner, was born in Nashville, Tennessee, and her great-grandfather, James Turner, was one of the early Governors of North Carolina.

I was born on the 2nd day of August, 1848, at Seguin, Guadalupe County. In 1855 I was forced up with others at Seguin during an Indian raid in which a white boy named Jewett McGee and a mulatto girl belonging to the Elams were killed by the Indians. In the early fifties my

father and some of my uncles left Seguin and settled on the Blanco River in Hays County, and the place is still known as "Sowell's Valley." Here, when about six years old, I saw my first Indian, and came near being captured by him. Five children of us, one sister older than myself, and three of Uncle Andrew's children, were on top of a small mountain, getting cedar wax. The Indian came out of a cedar brake near by and advanced towards us, and was first discovered by my sister, who said, "Look there, what an ugly man," and ran. All took one frightened look and ran also. I being the youngest and very short-legged, was left behind, but ran also, and all went screaming at the top of our voices. I finally tangled in the weeds, and fell, screaming like a young panther, and looked back at the Indian, who was close upon me. His long hair, painted face and black eyes are still fresh in my memory as he stooped and reached for me. I sprang away to one side like a little rabbit, evading his grasp and giving vent to a screech that was enough to have almost frightened the Indian himself, and it seemed as if that was the case, for he turned and ran back into the cedar brake. By this time the other children had crossed the open glade and started down the hill, all still screaming. I ran again as fast as I could, and at the brow of the hill met father and Uncle Andrew, each with a rifle. They had passed the other children, who told them that an old, ugly man was after them, and had caught Jack. Father was pale and breathing hard, having run all the way from the house and up the hill. He asked me where the man was, and between my sobs I told them, and pointed to the spot in

the edge of the brake where I had last seen him. Telling me now to follow the other children, they went on in pursuit of the Indian, but he eluded the search made for him, and in about an hour father and uncle returned.

When about grown I joined the Rangers and was in the Wichita campaign of 1870-71. I scouted, trailed Indians, suffered with cold, hunger, thirst, and witnessed many startling scenes. I was present at the scene of the Keenon and Paschal massacre, and helped to bury the victims, seven women and children. I was one of the eleven Rangers who made the fight with forty-one Indians at the Keep Ranch, and saved the women and children there; was powder burned in the face, and one arrow cut the shoulder of my jacket.

Introduction

If we should go back beyond the written history of any section of the great State of Texas and delve into the dim ages of the past, even confined to the narrow limits of Fort Bend County, what strange and wonderful sights we would see. Great animals, now extinct, would be discovered, compared to which the elephants of our day would appear dwarfish. They grazed over these prairies and slaked their thirst in the waters of the Brazos River. Their remains have been found in the river near Richmond, an account of which will be given in its proper place in this work. The river and the landscape were here when Columbus and his daring sailors, in their frail crafts, were plowing the unknown seas, with the beaks of the little ships pointing toward these shores. Wild savage tribes were here then, chasing the buffalo and other game, and their wigwams dotted the banks of our streams. They hunted and camped along the Brazos, fought with other tribes, and performed the scalp dance and war dance, and loud warwhoops resounded over the spot where Richmond now stands.

We would like to know by what name they called the great river on whose banks they lived. Brazos is a Spanish name, meaning an arm, and not the dialect of a savage with an unwritten language. They melted away before the advance of European civilization and names of places and tribes became extinct, leaving no trace of their exist-

ence, except rude mounds of stone and earth which mutely told of another people which were once here, but now gone forever.

After the passing of many centuries, a strange race of people came upon the scene, marching up the Brazos valley in glistening armor and gaudy colored banners flying, striking the natives with terror and astonishment. These were the steel-clad cavaliers of Spain. They explored all of the rivers of Texas, from the mouth to the head of each, and gave them Spanish names. Over the spot where Richmond now stands no doubt they passed. After them came the French under Robert de La Salle in 1685, and it is very likely that he and some of his men were within the present limits of Fort Bend County. La Salle was a Norman by birth, but was at this time in the employ of the French King, and made an accidental landing on the then nameless coast of Texas while in search of the mouth of the Mississippi River. The unfortunate explorer was murdered by his own men, and the colony went to pieces. Some were killed by Indians, while others went north as far as Red River, and then drifted towards Mexico and were taken by the Spaniards.

We will now take up the modern history of Fort Bend County, which we know something about, and will try to make it as interesting to our readers as possible, dealing in facts.

THE AUTHOR.

Fort Bend

One of the old original counties settled by colonists under Stephen F. Austin, was created from Austin County, December the 29th, 1837, and named for the old fort which was built in the bend of the Brazos River (where the town of Richmond now is) in 1821. The country is bounded on the east by Harris, west by Colorado, north by Austin, and south by Brazoria counties. This is the general boundary, other counties touching it in various places. It has 889 square miles of territory, and an area of 568,960 acres.

RICHMOND,

The county seat of Fort Bend County, was laid off the same year that the county was created, and named for Richmond, Virginia, which place was named for the Duke of Richmond, England. It is situated on the west bank of the Brazos River, 33 miles west of Houston, and about 63 miles from Galveston in a northerly direction. The population is about 1,500, has water works and an electric light plant, a bank, three railroads, long distance telephone exchange, a local telephone exchange, cotton gins, grist mills, machine shop, incorporated land title abstract company, good churches, schools, hotels, etc. The lodges are represented by the Masons, Knights of Pythias, Woodmen of the World, Red Men, etc. The distance from Waco by river to Richmond is 328 miles, and from Richmond to the Gulf of Mexico ninety-five miles.

ROSENBERG,

The next largest town in the county, is within about one-quarter of a mile from the bank of the Brazos River. It has a population of more than 800, and is situated about three miles west, or northwest, from Richmond on the Southern Pacific Railroad. It has good churches, schools, hotels, business houses, newspaper, etc.

There are other thriving towns in the county, to-wit: Fulshear, Orchard, Missouri City, Duke, Arcola, Foster, Simonton, Sartartia, Booth, Beasley, Garabaldi, Kendleton, Katy, Flewellen, Harlem, Thompson, and Sugarland. The latter has the largest sugar plantation and sugar refinery combined in the world, and has also a paper mill.

CHAPTER I.

MOSES AUSTIN.

For the information of our readers who are not familiar with the early colonial scheme of settling Texas with American colonists when it was a province of Spain, we will give a short sketch of the man in whose brain it originated and the various causes which led to it. Moses Austin was a native of Connecticut, born at the village of Durham in 1767. When a boy he went to Philadelphia, and in 1787 he married Miss Maria Brown. His brother, Stephen, was then at the head of an important house in Philadelphia, and Moses Austin soon after his marriage took charge of a branch house in Richmond, Virginia. In a few years the brothers purchased Chizzel's lead mines in Wythe County, Virginia, and Moses Austin took charge of the enterprise. At that place on the 3rd of November, 1793, Stephen Fuller Austin, the future colonial empresario of Texas, was born. Two other children lived to maturity and came to Texas, James Brown Austin and Emily M. Austin. James died of yellow fever at New Orleans in August, 1829. Emily married twice—first, James Bryan, and after his death James F. Perry.

In a few years the Philadelphia and Richmond house of the Austins failed, which also involved the loss of the lead mines. At this time reports came of rich lead mines in upper Louisiana (now in Missouri) which attracted the attention of Moses Austin. The territory then being

under the dominion of Spain, he procured a passport from the Spanish minister to the United States in 1797 and visited that region, and secured from the governor, Baron de Carondelet, a grant of a league of land covering the site where the town of Potosi, Washington County, Missouri, now is, and in 1779 removed there with his family and formed the first American settlement in that section.

He prospered in mining and other pursuits for some years, dispensed a liberal hospitality, and enjoyed an enviable character. But again disaster came. The failure of the Bank of St. Louis swept away his accumulations and left him almost destitute of means, having freely surrendered everything to his creditors. He was now fifty-three years old and began to look around for a new field of enterprise. His residence of twenty years in Missouri had made him familiar to some extent with Spanish laws and methods of administration, and he had also acquired considerable knowledge of Texas through the reports of Captain Pike and others, who, in 1812 and 1813, served under Magee and Perry, and from trappers and Indian traders. In possession of such knowledge and animated by an enterprising spirit, his mind naturally turned to Texas as a field in which to build up his shattered fortunes. With a forethought justified by results, he conceived the idea of founding a colony of his countrymen in the trackless wilderness of Texas. Traveling by land on horseback, he made the long and perilous trip to San Antonio, Texas, where he arrived on the 23rd day of December, 1820. Here, however, as soon as his presence and mission were known, Governor Antonio Martinez ordered him to quit the country, as he had violated its laws by entering the Province of Texas without permission of the Spanish King. This was a sad blow to the exalted ideas of Austin in regard to his colonization of the rich lands of Tex-

as east of San Antonio, and he wearily and in much despondency commenced making his preparations to return home, when, fortunately, he met with the Baron de Bastrop, whom he had known in New Orleans and who was now a member of the municipal government. To him Austin explained the peaceful object of his mission, and the Baron warmly espoused his cause and commended him to Governor Martinez as a worthy man and a former subject of Spain, and secured for him not only the good will but the earnest co-operation of the Governor and other authorities of the place, and these in turn recommended his proposed application to settle 300 families in Texas to the favorable consideration of General Don Joaquin Arredondo, Commanding General of the Eastern Internal Provinces, with headquarters at Monterey, Mexico.

Moses Austin, elated by these prospects of success, in January started on his homeward journey, leaving the Baron de Bastrop with instructions as his representative to look after his interests and inform him as soon as possible of the success of his application should it meet with favor. We do not know who his companions were on this return trip. He followed the old Spanish military road from San Antonio to Nacogdoches, and from there to Natchitoches, Louisiana. It was a severe winter, rains were frequent and the swollen streams had to be crossed by swimming or on rafts. A gloomy beginning for a great enterprise. Finally, however, he reached his home in Missouri. Before leaving for Texas he abandoned a preconceived idea of establishing a farm on Red River to facilitate the passage of immigrants through the wilderness of Arkansas. He, instead, determined to make New Orleans the gateway to Texas. Stephen F. Austin was therefore in New Orleans, having been sent there by his father, with instructions to make such conditional contracts as seemed

necessary to provide for the prompt transportation of colonists by way of the Gulf to the coast of Texas.

Moses Austin arrived at "Hazel Run," the home of his daughter, Mrs. Bryan, with his constitution undermined and a fatal disease permeating his whole system, brought on by exposure to rain and cold in his long journeys. He lingered, however, for some months, but when he saw that his end was near, transmitted to his son the duty of executing his plans, full of promise to after ages, conveyed blessings to the members of his family present, and died on the 10th day of June, 1821.

One historian says of him:

"Noble heart! Great soul! The perpetuation of thy fame needs no stately monolith or monumental pile!"

CHAPTER II.

STEPHEN F. AUSTIN.

It seems that on account of the long distance and slow transmission of mails in those days, that Stephen F. Austin, busy at New Orleans doing the work his father had intrusted to him, was not aware of the fatal illness and death of his father until some time after that sad event. Where the father, however, laid down the work the son took it up. The application of Moses Austin was approved by General Arredonda at Monterey on the 17th of January, 1821, a few days after the departure of Austin from San Antonio. This action of the Commanding General was in due time officially communicated to Provincial Governor Martinez at San Antonio, and he despatched Don Erasmo Seguin to the United States with instructions as special commissioner to inform Austin of the success of his application and conduct the first band of immigrants into the country. Being apprised of the arrival of Seguin at Natchitoches, and the particulars of his mission, Stephen Austin hastened from New Orleans to meet him. Here the devoted son learned, either by mail or messenger, of the death of his father and of his wish that he should carry out his plans.

At this time Stephen F. Austin was 28 years of age, and had served as a member of the Territorial Legislature of Missouri, entering that body in 1813 and being regularly re-elected until 1819, when he removed to Arkansas for the purpose of establishing a farm to be used as an immigrant depot.

He remained in the Territory of Arkansas part of the years 1819-20. Moses Austin on his way to Texas in 1820

proceeded to Little Rock, where he met his son. It was then decided to give up the farm project and for Stephen to go to New Orleans and there await the action of the Mexican or Spanish government upon the application for a colonial grant.

Stephen F. Austin was born in Virginia and reared in Missouri. He attended school in Connecticut for a short time and completed his studies at Transylvania University, Lexington, Kentucky. Of good habits, clear mind, industrious, patient, his reputation was such as to inspire confidence of success.

Accompanied by the Commissioner, Don Erasmo Seguin, he left Natchitoches for San Antonio on the 5th of July, 1821, to confer with Governor Martinez, secure a transfer of the grant made to his father, and ask permission to explore a portion of the country and select a district in which to locate his colony. Besides himself and Seguin, the party consisted of fourteen persons, all of whom became settlers, to-wit: Erwine, Barre, Marple, Beard, Belew, W. Smithers, Edward Lovelace, Henry Holstein, Neil Gasper, William Little, Joseph Polly, James Beard, William Wilson, and Dr. James Hewitson. Polly, Holstein, Beard and Little afterwards settled in Fort Bend County. On the first day of August, 1821, they encamped at the old San Antonio and Nacogdoches crossing of the Brazos, and on the 12th of the same month they arrived at San Antonio. Governor Martinez extended a cordial welcome to Austin, recognized him as successor to his father's rights, and manifested a sincere desire to encourage his enterprise. Austin submitted to the Governor a plan for granting land to immigrants, the plan promising a section of 640 acres to each man over twenty-one years of age, half that amount to each married woman, 160 acres to each child and eighty acres to owners of slaves for each slave introduced. This plan was approved

by the Governor, but was afterwards changed to a league and labor to each head of family, and 640 acres to single men. A league of land contains 4428 acres and a labor 177 acres. The league could be taken up in one place and the labor in another.

Austin hastily examined the country along the lower waters of the Guadalupe, Lavaca, Navidad, Colorado, Brazos and San Jacinto Rivers, and also along the Gulf shore. Selecting a site for his colony in that rich, alluvial region, he repaired by land to New Orleans. Before leaving, however, Austin selected a great bend in the Brazos River, where Richmond is now, and left five young men there to build a fort, the nucleus of a large settlement which gathered in due time. These five young men were the first installment of the "Old Three Hundred," and their names and manner of building the fort, from which Fort Bend County took its name, will be given later on.

The groundwork of the edifice was now laid and it remained to erect the superstructure. This was a trying period in the life of Stephen F. Austin. The great responsibilities which he had assumed were such as to call out the great mind and will which he possessed, constancy of purpose and ability as a leader. To carry out his plans he stood in great need of money, and, for a time, it worried him not a little, but in New Orleans he found Joseph L. Hawkins, an old schoolmate, and in him also found a friend, who not only had plenty of money, but was willing to help him. Through his aid a schooner called the "Lively" was loaded with provisions and farm implements and despatched to the mouth of the Brazos. Here the supplies were hid and the vessel returned to New Orleans. It was, however, soon sent back with another cargo of supplies and eighteen immigrants, and now comes a sad statement in regard to these unfortunate would-be settlers. The little ship or its passengers were never heard from any more. Whether they

went down in a storm or were captured by pirates, none could tell.

In November, 1821, when the "Lively" sailed on her second voyage, Austin left New Orleans to lead the first body of immigrants into Texas. He reached the Brazos on the 31st day of December, 1821, crossed to the west side of that stream, and on January 1st, 1822, pitched camp on a creek in what is now Washington County and named it New Year's Creek, which it still bears. Andrew Robinson and others settled in that vicinity and some came on down the river and settled at Fort Bend. Many immigrants still continued to arrive and formed settlements wherever it suited their fancy. Thus began the permanent settlement of Texas by the Anglo-Saxon race.

Austin now proceeded to the coast to meet the "Lively" and to secure the other supplies left at the mouth of the Brazos. Here was a sore and sad disappointment for the brave and energetic Austin. The Craunkaway Indians had found the supplies and carried them away and the ill-fated schooner never came. After long and anxious waiting Austin realized that the "Lively" had been lost at sea, and with a sad heart went back to his colony, and on arriving there found that many additions had been made. Among these was his brother, James Brown Austin, Josiah H. Bell and his young wife, formerly Miss Mary McKenzie, of Kentucky. Her son, Thadeus C. Bell, born later in the year, was the second child born in the colony, having been preceded a few weeks by a child of Henry Jones, who had settled further down the Brazos about the time Mr. Bell and his wife reached Texas.

About this time (of the first installment) and a little later on, came Henry Jones, Randall Jones, James Jones, William Little, David Fitzgerald, David Randon, Styles, Spencer, the Mortons, the Thompsons, the Kuykendalls, William Stafford, Dr. Johnson Hunter, M. M. Battle, Ran-

dolph Foster, Darst, Beard, Polly, Holstein, Wiley Martin, Eli Fenn, and others, whose names will be brought out as we proceed with the history, and all of whom settled in Fort Bend County.

Having proceeded thus far, Austin deemed it proper to report his progress to the Governor at San Antonio, and accordingly set out, with his mind full of his plans and exalted hopes of future prosperity. On arriving in San Antonio he was greatly surprised and disappointed to learn that a change had taken place in Mexico on account of a successful revolution, and that it would be necessary for him to go to the City of Mexico and procure from the new government a renewal of the authority and privileges granted. He accordingly left Josiah H. Bell as his agent; and with Dr Robert Andrews as a companion, rode out of San Antonio on the 20th of March, and made the trip to the City of Mexico—a distance of 1200 miles—in 36 days, safely reaching the capital on the 29th of April, 1822.

Late in March of 1822 the schooner "Only Son," commanded by Capt. Benjamin Ellison, from New Orleans, entered Matagorda Bay with a number of immigrants seeking homes in the new colony. The vessel also had aboard supplies of provisions, household effects, and farming implements. She was owned by two of the immigrants, Kinchloe and Anderson, and sailed from New Orleans on the 7th of February with a total of ninety colonists and prospectors, among whom were Abraham Clare, George Helm, Mr. Bray and his son-in-law (Charles Whitson), and a Mr. Morgan, with their families, and Greenup Hayes, of Kentucky, a grandson of Daniel Boone. During this voyage a considerable number of the passengers died of yellow fever, and were buried at sea. A few days after the arrival of this schooner another vessel from New Orleans came to anchor in Matagorda Bay. Among the passengers on this boat were Samuel H. Williams,

afterwards the famous secretary of Austin's Colony, and Jonathan C. Peyton and wife. The immigrants from both vessels were landed on the west bank of the Colorado River, at a point three miles above the mouth of that stream. James Cummings conducted the newcomers into the interior—some to his camp, and some to a crossing on the Colorado River a few miles below where the town of Columbus is now situated.

When Stephen F. Austin reached the capital, politics were at a fever heat, and he found it impossible to secure immediate consideration of his claims.

Hayden Edwards, of Kentucky, Robert Leftwick, of Tennessee, Green DeWitt, of Missouri, and Gen. James Wilkinson, late of the United States Army, were also in the capital seeking permission to establish American colonies in Texas.

The first Congress summoned after the accession of Iturbide to power was still in session. The application to it by so many people wanting to introduce colonists led to the appointment of a committee to draft a general law on the subject. Austin very justly asserted and insisted that his claim was peculiar in its merits, and should receive consideration aside from general legislation intended to control future concessions. The committee, however, submitted to Congress a general bill. On the eve of its enactment into a law, October the 30th, 1822, Iturbide dispersed Congress, and appointed in lieu thereof a Junta composed of thirty-five members, and the question of colonization was referred to that body. Under the inspiration of its imperial master, the Junta passed a law, and it was approved by Iturbide, on the 4th of January, 1823. This was different in regard to land grants from the first contract which Austin made with the former government, and reads in substance as follows:

“To encourage the immigration of foreigners, the gov-

ernment promises to give out of the public domain not less than a labor of land to each farmer, and not less than one league (4,428 acres) to each stock raiser. Immigrants might come on their own account, or be introduced through empresarios."

These empresarios, or contractors, for each 200 families introduced, were to receive fifteen leagues and two labors (66,774 acres); but, however great the number of immigrants introduced by them, they could not acquire more than a total of forty-five leagues and six labors (200,332 acres). Each empresario was required to have his lands settled and cultivated within twelve years from the date of his concession, and to sell or dispose of two-thirds within twenty years.

On the approval of this law on the 4th of January, 1823, Austin, who had been in the city over nine months, pressed his suit for a special confirmation of the grant held by him. He had one warm friend, Herrera, Minister of Foreign and Internal Relations, under Iturbide. He advocated the claims of Austin, and on the 18th day of February the grant was confirmed. But when Austin, a few days later, was about to leave for Texas, another revolution occurred, which drove Iturbide from power, and he found it necessary to postpone his departure.

Unwilling to await the meeting of the new Congress ordered to convene in the succeeding August, he pressed the merits of his claim upon the attention of Victoria Bravo and Negrete, heads of the provisional government, and on the 14th of April, 1823, they ratified the action previously taken by Iturbide.

Austin's grant contained no limitation as to territory, nor was a time fixed in which to colonize the 300 families as specified in the contract. Austin left for home on the 28th of April, 1823, invested with all powers necessary for the civil and military government of his colony.

In his absence many immigrants had arrived from the United States to make their homes in Texas. In the valleys and on the prairies their cabins arose, from the Colorado to the San Jacinto, and the wandering Indian from his lurking place saw household fires glowing upon Anglo-Saxon hearthstones, and, bewildered, beheld the dawning of a civilization that was to redeem the wilderness and cause it to blossom like the rose.

On the 17th of July, 1823, Governor Garcia of Texas appointed the Baron de Bastrop to act with Austin to set apart lands and issue titles to the colonists.

In an official order issued on the 27th of July, 1823, the Governor gave the name of San Felipe de Austin to the capital of the colony. San Felipe, or St. Phillip, was the Governor's patron saint. The name of Austin was added as a compliment to the empresario.

No land titles were issued until 1824, but during that year 247 were recorded.

Austin's colony steadily increased in numbers, among whom were such talented men as William H. Wharton, Judge R. M. Williamson, Francis W. Johnson, David G. Burnett, John H. Moore, Jesse Grimes, William J. Russell and others.

We cannot go into all of the particulars of the life of Stephen F. Austin, but only enough to clearly define the status of affairs, so that our history, so far as it relates to Fort Bend County, will be better understood. The trouble with the Mexicans which culminated in the battle of Velasco in 1832, and the long journey which Austin again had to make to the City of Mexico, where he was thrown into prison, can only be incidentally mentioned.

The Texans wanted a separate state government. They had been attached to Coahuila, but now in 1833 the population was sufficient, they thought, to form a state. Three commissioners were selected to convey a memorial of these

wants and aspirations of the colonists to the City of Mexico, but Austin, who was one of them, was the only man who would undertake the mission. Always ready to aid his colonists in any way that he could, he made the long and tedious journey, but, on arriving at the capital, another successful revolution had just ended, and Santa Anna was President of Mexico. Austin's papers were referred to a committee, and during the long and vexatious delay he became impatient, and urged his suit with such importunity that the Mexican officials became offended, and having also learned that he had written a letter not complimentary to them, they became more offended, and finally threw him into prison. Here for two years he was confined, and then allowed to return to Texas in September, 1835. He was welcomed back by his colonists with great rejoicing. The old pioneers who had come with him to Texas gathered around him and received him as one arisen from the dead.

The Texas Revolution soon broke out, commencing in DeWitt's Colony, at Gonzales, where a fight occurred over a little cannon which the Mexicans attempted to deprive the colonists of. The Mexicans were defeated, and went back to San Antonio and reported to General Cos, who was in command there, and had sent after the cannon. A volunteer army was at once raised and Austin elected as commander. He marched upon San Antonio, and after the battle of Mission Concepcion turned the command over to General Ed. Burleson, and went to the United States to try and enlist aid in men and money to assist the Texans in the war against Mexico, and was in Washington City when the battle of San Jacinto was fought.

Under the new order of things, when he returned to Texas he was made Secretary of State, and entered at once upon his duties. A prime measure of the administration was to secure the annexation of Texas to the Ameri-

can Union, and one of the first acts of the Secretary was to prepare instructions for the diplomatic agents to be sent to Washington. He spent the greater part of three days and portions of the nights engaged in this work. The accommodations for the government at Columbia were very poor. The weather was cold, and Austin was compelled to write in an unfinished building, without a fire. Exposure in this unfurnished room brought on a cold, which developed into pneumonia, of which he died at the house of George B. McKinstry in Columbia December 27th, 1836.

The following order was at once issued from the War Department:

"The father of Texas is no more! The first pioneer of the wilderness is dead! Stephen F. Austin, Secretary of State, expired this day at half-past twelve o'clock at Columbia. As a testimony of respect to his high standing, undeviating moral rectitude, and as a mark of the nation's gratitude for his untiring and invaluable services, all officers, civil and military, are requested to wear crape on the right arm for the space of thirty days. All officers commanding posts, garrisons or detachments will, as soon as information is received of this melancholy event, cause twenty-three guns to be fired, with an interval of five minutes between each, and also have the garrison and regimental colors hung with black during the space of mourning for the illustrious dead.

"By order of the President.

"WM. S. FISHER,
"Secretary of War."

CHAPTER III.

RANDOLPH FOSTER.

"Uncle Ran." Foster, as he was familiarly known in his old days, was among the first settlers of Fort Bend County, coming with Stephen F. Austin in the first installment. "Uncle Ran.," however, had been to Texas and camped within the present limits of Fort Bend County prior to the advent of the colonist. He was a native of Mississippi, and married there Miss Lucy Hunter. His league of land was located in Fort Bend County, nine miles above Richmond, on the east side of the Brazos River.

During the time that Austin was with the colonists on the Brazos, he often went with Randolph Foster to hunt game, but was not successful as a hunter. Mr. Foster used to tell him he was too impatient, that he walked too fast, made too much noise, and scared the game, and would say, shaking his head, "Ah, Mr. Austin, you will never make a hunter." Uncle Randolph loved the woods, and was often away weeks at a time, roaming about, killing game and looking at the country. He built a good home, and had plenty around him, and never knew what it was to want for the necessities of life.

During the Mexican invasion of 1836 he was very active in the cause of the colonists, helping to keep the army of General Houston in supplies, furnishing a great deal of wild meat brought down in the bottoms and on the prairies with his long rifle—such game as bear, deer, and turkeys (they being very plentiful). When the final retreat was made from the Brazos, Mr. Foster went with his family and others and helped to take care of them and keep them in something to eat, and when the famous victory was

gained at San Jacinto went back on a short visit to Mississippi, but soon returned to the old home in Fort Bend County. They were fortunate in not having their home burned, as many others had, and soon recuperated from the horrors and desolation of war. Mr. Foster lived to be 89 years of age, dying in Fort Bend County, near the old home, at the home of his daughter, Mrs. Mary L. Blakely. His mind was clear and unimpaired to the last, retaining a most remarkable memory of scenes and incidents of the long ago. His wife preceded him many years to the tomb, but both now rest side by side in the family burying ground at the old home. They had seven children, six of whom lived to be married. Isaac married Miss Ann Eliza Ewell. Nancy died in infancy. Mary L. married Thomas Blakely, who served Fort Bend County as sheriff during his time, and died in 1885. Lucretia was married twice, her first husband being Tucker Wade, son of one of the early settlers. Her second husband was John Mays, both still living. Caroline married Dr. James A. Gibson, both now dead. Matilda married Monroe Sillimore; she survived him, and married David McElwee. Randolph married Miss Sallie Jones, daughter of Captain Randall Jones; now lives at Patterson.

MRS. MARY L. BLAKELY,

daughter of Randolph Foster, was born in Fort Bend County in 1833, and was therefore three years of age during the famous "Runaway Scrape," as it was sometimes called by the old settlers in their flight from the Mexicans. While Mrs. Blakely was in this historic retreat she has no recollection of it, being borne through all the trying scenes of that time in the loving and tender arms of a mother, all unconscious of the significance of this rapid flight from home.

Mrs. Blakely still survives, and lives in Richmond. Only three of her eight children survive, Kate, Calvin and Bassett. Katy married Capt. Sidney Winston, great grandson of Mrs. Jane Long. Calvin married Miss Katy Wessendorff. Bassett married Miss Bonnie Dunlevy, all of Richmond, Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER IV.

LAND TITLES ISSUED IN FORT BEND COUNTY FROM 1824 TO 1832.

- Elijah Allcorn, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.
Thomas Allsbury, two leagues, patented July 8th, 1824.
William Andrews, one league, patented July 15th, 1824.
William Andrews, one labor, patented July 15th, 1824.
Wm. T. Austin, one league, patented April 25th, 1831.
Charles Baird, one league, patented October 17th, 1832
Thomas Barnett, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.
Wm. Barnett and Abner Harris, one league, patented
June 4th, 1827.
Miles M. Battle, one league, patented May 31st, 1827.
James Beard, one league, patented August 10th, 1824.
Charles A. Bettner, one-fourth league, patented November 20th, 1832.
Gail Borden, Jr., one league, patented March 29th, 1832.
David Bright, one league, patented July 15th, 1824.
Nathan Brookshire, one league, patented October 5th, 1835.
Geo. Brown and Charles Belknap, one league, patented
May 22nd, 1827.
Jesse H. Cartwright, one league, patented March 31st, 1828.
Isaac N. Charles, one-half league, patented March 26th, 1831.
Horatio Chriesman, one league, patented July 8th, 1824.
Gabriel Cole, one-fourth league, patented November 27th, 1832.
Gabriel Cole, one-fourth league, patented November 27th, 1832.

Peter Conrad, one-fourth league, patented May 31st, 1827.

Kinchen W. Davis, one league, patented May 28th, 1832.

John T. Edwards, one-fourth league, patented April 16th, 1831.

Philo Fairchild, one league, patented April 4th, 1831.

David Fitzgerald, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.

John Foster, one league, patented July 15th, 1824.

John Foster, three labors, patented July 15th, 1824.

Randolph Foster, one league, patented July 16th, 1824.

Churchill Fulcher, one league, patented July 16th, 1824.

Thomas Gay, one-fourth league, patented June 8th, 1831.

William Hall, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.

Alexander Hodge, one league, patented April 12th, 1828.

Robert Hodge, one league, patented July 14th, 1831.

George Huff, one and one-half leagues, patented August 19th, 1824.

Samuel Isaacs, one league, patented July 15th, 1824.

Angus J. James, one-fourth league, patented May 5th, 1831.

Edward Jeffery, one-fourth league, patented April 28th, 1831.

Henry Jones, one league, patented April 10th, 1824.

Randall Jones, one-half league, patented July 15th, 1824.

Randall Jones, one labor, patented July 15th, 1824.

James W. Jones, one labor, patented August 10th, 1824.

John Jones, one-fourth league, patented May 31st, 1827.

Samuel Kennedy, one league, patented July 7th, 1824.

Sarah Kennedy, one league, patented April 25th, 1831.

Jas. Knight and W. C. White, one league, patented July 15th, 1824.

Jas. Knight and W. C. White, one labor, patented July 15th, 1824.

Abner Kuykendall, one league, patented July 7th, 1827.

Joseph Kuykendall, one league, patented July 8th, 1824.

Enoch Latham, one-fourth league, patented October 6th, 1835.

Elizabeth Lippincott, one league, patented May 19th, 1827.

John Little, one labor, patented May 21st, 1828.

William Little, one labor, patented July 10th, 1824.

William Little, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.

Mrs. Jane H. Long, one league, patented April 30th, 1827.

Wiley W. Martin, one league, patented May 7th, 1831.

Joseph M. McCormick, one league, patented June 22nd, 1832.

Isaac McGary, one league, patented March 29th, 1831.

David H. Milburn, one-fourth league, patented May 27th, 1831.

Simon Miller, one league, patented August 27th, 1824.

John W. Moore, one-fourth league, patented April 28th, 1831.

William Morton, one labor, patented July 15th, 1824.

William Morton, one and one-half league, patented July 15th, 1824.

William Neel, one-fourth league, patented June 4th, 1824.

Andrew Worthington, one league, patented May 28th, 1831.

Jeremiah S. O'Conner, one league, patented April 9th, 1831.

Robert Peebles, one league, patented June 27th, 1831.

William Pettus, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.

Samuel Pharr, one-fourth league, patented April 27th, 1831.

Joseph H. Polly, one league, patented August 16th, 1824.

Elizabeth Powell, one league, patented March 21st, 1831.

Joseph Powell, one-fourth league, patented May 2nd, 1831.

John Rabb, one league, patented July 8th, 1824.

David Randon, one-half league, patented December 5th, 1832.

David Randon and Isaac Pennington, one league, patented August 3rd, 1824.

John Randon, one league, patented August 19th, 1824.

Elijah Roark, one league, patented July 10th, 1824.

Andrew Roberts, one league, patented May 11th, 1827.

Noel F. Roberts, one and one-fourth league, patented July 15th, 1824.

Edward Robertson, one league, patented March 31st, 1828.

Joseph San Pierre, one labor, patented August 24th, 1824.

Chas. D. Sayre, one league, patented May 4th, 1831.

Henry Scott, one league, patented April 8th, 1831.

James Scott, one league, patented August 7th, 1824.

David Shelby, one league, patented July 24th, 1824.

J. Frazier, one league, patented July 24th, 1824.

J. McCormick, one league, patented July 24th, 1824.

Moses Shipman, one league, patented July 19th, 1824.

Lancelot Smithers, one-fourth league, 382,000 square varas, patented April 4th, 1831.

Nancy Spencer, one league, patented August 14th, 1824.

William Stafford, one and one-fourth league, patented August 16th, 1824.

Chas. B. Stewart, one-fourth league, patented May 17th, 1831.

Jesse Vance, one-fourth league, patented June 4th, 1827.

Thomas Westall, one league, patented July 19th, 1824.

Ed. P. Whitehead, one-fourth league, patented October 7th, 1835.

Asa Wickson, one-fourth league, patented April 23rd, 1831.

Barnabas Wickson, one league, patented April 4th, 1831.

Jane Wilkins, one league, patented May 26th, 1827.

Samuel M. Williams, one league, patented April 11th, 1828.

Reuben D. Wood, one league, patented November 24th, 1832.

Michael Young, one league, patented May 5th, 1831.

CHAPTER V.

LONG'S EXPEDITION.

Dr. James Long was born February 9, 1793—a native of Tennessee, a nice, accomplished gentleman, good physician and surgeon, and in his young days, no doubt, had no ambition higher than that of succeeding in his chosen profession and being surrounded by his friends, and at all times enjoying the home circle of a happy family. How often, however, in this life do circumstances turn the tide of human affairs and plunge an individual into a vortex as resistless as fate, which bears him on to his doom, and instead of living a long and contented life in the midst of his loved ones, and enjoying the refined society for which he is so well fitted, he spends a short season in the midst of a bloody revolution, his family exposed to all the horrors of war, and he himself cut down in the prime of life by the assassin's bullet, and they of his flesh and blood devotedly following his fortunes, left alone on a wild and desolate shore. This is only one instance in tens of thousands of a similar character which has befallen unhappy humanity since the race of mankind began.

During the war of 1812, with England, Dr. Long was a surgeon in the army of General Jackson, and as such participated in the battle of New Orleans, fought on the 8th of January, 1815.

He owned a fine plantation near Natchez, and when the war was over resigned his commission in the army and married Miss Jane Wilkinson of that vicinity, and settled on his farm as a planter and to the practice of his profession. His wife was the daughter of General Wilkinson of the United States Army, and was a noble, grand,

cultured woman, devotedly attached to her husband, and bravely and heroically willing to risk anything and all things in his behalf.

The influence of the times and the day in which he lived shaped the destiny of Dr. Long. Residing in the region which had been, in 1800, and again in 1812-13, the headquarters first of Phillip Nolan and next of Magee, Kemper, Perry and other leaders, he became imbued with the idea of Americanizing Texas, and found no difficulty in drawing to his standard a large number of followers. The enterprise of Dr. Long was undertaken shortly before Moses Austin took the first steps that led to the establishment of American colonies in the Province of Texas, and were not without minor effect. Many of Long's men at a later date became valuable citizens of the Province, Republic and State.

In 1819 Dr. Long was active in getting up a public meeting in Natchez for revolutionizing Texas, and subscribed liberally to the scheme. It was then expected that General Adair of Kentucky would lead the expedition, but that gentleman declined, and Dr. Long was selected for the commander. On the 17th day of June, 1819, he left Natchez with seventy-five men, and very soon his force numbered about three hundred.

Among those who joined the standard of General Long were Col. Samuel Davenport, Benard Gutierrez, Hamlin Cook, Horatio Bigelow, Stephen Baker, John C. Burnett, John Sibley, J. Child, Pedro Procillo, etc. Most of these were refugees who had been driven from Texas by the Spaniards. General Long arriving at Nacogdoches, in Texas, a provisional government was organized consisting of a supreme council, and a proclamation issued declaring Texas to be an independent Republic. Liberal laws were enacted providing for the disposition of public lands. During the passage of General Long and his force from

the United States to Nacogdoches, Texas, Mrs. Long and her two children had been left at Alexandria with her sister, Mrs. Cavitt. In the month of July she arrived at Nacogdoches on horseback, escorted by Capt. Randall Jones, her children being left with her sister, and one of them, her youngest, dying soon after her departure. The troubles and the sorrows of this noble woman were now commencing. The loss of his child and the hardships which his young wife had to endure to reach him cast a shadow over the life and plans of General Long for a period in this, the incipency of his conquest, but he was in the current of events and must drift with it and see his hopes crowned with success or succumb to the inevitable; so the work went on.

A newspaper was established, edited by Horatio Bigelow; trading houses were established on the Trinity and at the falls of the Brazos by David Long, brother of the General, and Captain Johnson. Captain Walker erected a fort a few miles below where the town of Washington was afterwards built, and Major Cook a block house at Pecan Point, on Red River. Captain Smith, with forty-nine men, was stationed at the Cooshattie Village, on the Trinity.

Now, at this time the pirate leader, Jean Lafitte, occupied Galveston Island with several hundred of his followers, and his ships were depredating on Spanish commerce. He had, some years previous to this, destroyed a few American vessels, but when the British army were threatening New Orleans he sailed for that place with his men, and offered his services to General Jackson, which were accepted, and he and his force took an active part in the famous battle of the 8th of January. For this service all previous offenses against American commerce and shipping on the high seas were forgiven Lafitte, but with a strict injunction amounting to a threat that if these out-

rages were ever again repeated he and his men would have to leave Galveston Island forever.

It will be proper here to state that the Spanish authorities which then ruled Mexico, of which Texas was a part, had news of the invasion of Long, and sent Colonel Perez with a strong force to drive him back. This body of troops were now on the way, coming through the wilderness which lay between San Antonio (one of the Spanish military posts) and the Sabine River, the boundary line between the United States and the Spanish possessions.

General Long was very desirous of getting the aid of Lafitte in his enterprise, and sent James Gaines to Galveston Island to solicit his co-operation, but that dignitary referring to the failure of Mina, Aurey, Magee and others in previous attempts of the kind, declined to give any assistance. When Gaines came back and reported his failure, Long determined to visit the pirate chief in person, but on reaching the Cooshattie Village he received the startling and unexpected intelligence of the advance of Perez, and at once sent instructions to his wife to abandon Nacogdoches and recross the Sabine, which she promptly obeyed.

On the Brazos Perez surprised and captured Captain Johnson and ten of his men. Those of his force who escaped hastened to Walker's camp, below the mouth of the Navasota. The fugitives were pursued and Walker's camp attacked with such suddenness that its occupants, abandoning everything except their firearms, with difficulty succeeded in reaching Smith's camp at the Cooshattie Village on the Trinity. The camp and trading post of David Long on the Trinity was next attacked and Long killed. His men fled to Nacogdoches with the news of these three quickly succeeding disasters, which produced such a panic that the whole garrison and population, men and women, fled across the Sabine into Louisiana. Gen-

eral Long, learning of these disasters, hastened back to Nacogdoches, to find the place depopulated. As speedily as possible he crossed the Sabine, to find his wife and those who fled with her in safety on the east side.

Colonel Perez, finding Nacogdoches evacuated, sent a body of troops in pursuit of the refugees, but too late to overtake them before they crossed the Sabine. At the head of his principal force Perez, by an oblique counter-march, proceeded to the Cooshattie Village, where Captain Smith, reinforced by the fugitives from Walker's camp and Johnson's men from the Brazos, had about seventy-five men. He retreated down the valley of the Trinity, but was closely pursued and overtaken by Perez. The Americans, few as they were, turned fiercely upon the Spaniards, and a short but bloody and desperate battle took place. Being overwhelmed, however, by largely superior numbers they again retreated, having lost a number of men, but at the same time inflicting heavy loss on the enemy. This fight checked the Spanish army or royalists, as they were called (fighting for the King of Spain), and the Americans, not being pursued any further, went on and formed a camp at Bolivar Point, on the main land opposite Galveston Island.

This was about October, 1819, and wound up General Long's first expedition to Texas.

Without unnecessary delay, however, and undismayed, Long, with a few followers, took the coast route from Louisiana, joined his friends under Captain Smith at Bolivar Point, and began the erection of a mud fort.

In the meantime some interesting things had transpired on Galveston Island. A desperate character named Brown, one of the lieutenants of Lafitte, had scuttled and plundered an American ship in Matagorda Bay, but some of the crew making their escape reported the fact to the United States authorities, and a warship, commanded by

Lieutenant Kearny, was at once sent to Galveston Island to drive Lafitte and his band away. Before the arrival of the American man-of-war Brown and his crew arrived, and some of the men informed the pirate chief of the destruction of the American vessel by orders and assistance of the sub pirate chief. When Lieutenant Kearny sailed into the harbor and cast anchor in front of the red house occupied by Lafitte, the latter knew what his mission was, and at once had Brown hung to the yardarm of the *Pride*, the favorite ship of Lafitte. He then went in a boat out to the American vessel, and invited the commander and his officers to come ashore and dine with him (which they did, and were served in a most sumptuous manner), and explained that Brown had positively disobeyed his orders in molesting American shipping, and had paid the penalty of his disobedience by being promptly strung up to the yardarm of the *Pride*, as they could plainly see, as his body was still suspended there. All of this statement, however, was of no avail. Kearny told him his orders were imperative, and he and his band must go, and he would remain there with his guns trained on them until they departed. So when General Long arrived at Bolivar Point the sails of Lafitte's ships were just disappearing beyond the waves of the Gulf of Mexico.

To secure additional aid in men and munitions, General Long set out from Bolivar Point in an open boat for New Orleans. Here he was cordially received by General Ripley and other men of wealth and prominence, and met for the first time Col. Benjamin R. Milam, also John Austin, Colonel Christy and Don Felix Tres Palacios. The latter, an exile from Mexico, who was seeking to fit out an expedition to aid his countrymen to throw off the yoke of Spain, and with whom Milam, Austin and Christy were co-operating. An agreement was entered into to make common cause against Spain, and four small vessels,

loaded with supplies and having on board Mrs. Long and one child and a few daring spirits, sailed for Bolivar Point.

Arriving there, it was agreed that Tres Palacios, Milam and Christy, with a small force, should sail down the coast in one of the sloops, effect a landing somewhere in the region of Tampico, and endeavor to raise an army with which to move north to meet and co-operate with Long in his contemplated descent southward from Goliad. They sailed accordingly before the departure of Long from Bolivar Point, and successfully effected a landing.

Before General Long left Bolivar Point a French sloop loaded with wines and other supplies stranded on Galveston Island, near the present City of Galveston. Now, after the departure of the pirates from the island, it had been again occupied by the Craunkaway Indians, who had once fought a disastrous battle with Lafitte and his men there, and been driven away. These Indians discovering the stranded ship, came, to the number of 200, and attacked and butchered the crew, plundered the sloop and engaged in a drunken frolic and war dance. General Long, from Bolivar Point, witnessed all of this, and determined to chastise the Indians. After nightfall, with thirty men he passed over to the island in small boats, and while the orgies were at their height poured a destructive volley into their midst. The Indians, although taken by surprise, outnumbered Long's men seven to one, and being heated with wine, rallied and stood their ground. For a time the fight raged desperately, the combatants fighting hand to hand. Finally Long and his men were compelled to get back to their boats and escape again to the mainland, having three men killed and several wounded—two severely. Thirty-two Indian warriors were left dead on the ground. During the fight General Long captured two

Indian boys and carried them to Bolivar Point. One of them was afterwards accidentally killed.

Among Long's men was Mordella, a nephew of Tres Palacios, who attempted to organize a conspiracy against the expedition. It was discovered, however, by Long, and the conspirator was brought to trial, found guilty, and executed on the east end of Galveston Island. When the expedition finally started from Bolivar Point the General left his wife and one child, a colored servant girl, Mrs. Dr. Allen, Dr. Edgar, and three or four men, a mounted cannon, small arms, ammunition, and a supply of provisions.

Everything being now in readiness, he set sail for Goliad (then called La Bahia) with fifty-two men, the names of some of them being as follows: James Long, commander; Major Burns, Captain John Austin, Captain Johnson, Captain Williams, Lieutenant Eagan, Lieutenant Robinson, Stanley Williams, Lieutenant Elliott, Lieutenant Chase, Lieutenant Tobey, Sergeant Robinson, Dr. Allen, — Patton, Ebenezer Lathrop, James Wilson, — White (known as "Old Blanco"), — Smith, — Smith, Frank Keller, John Wyatt, George Early, Henry Nall, — Black, Big and Little Patrick, father and son; — Lincoln, — McDonald, Captain Brown, Lieutenant Rosenberg, — Bliker, — Hamstein, John McHenry.

The fleet consisted of a schooner and two sloops. They entered Matagorda Bay, passed through what is now known as McHenry's Bayou into the bay of Esprita Santo, and proceeded to Mesquite Landing, on the west bank of the Guadalupe, and fifteen miles above the mouth of that stream. Here General Long and his men disembarked, and, leaving the boats in charge of Black, marched upon Goliad. Black was killed a few days later by Spanish scouts. Long's party reached Goliad and surprised the fort at night without being discovered, and made the

attack at daylight. The resistance was feeble, and the garrison soon surrendered. Long and his men remained in quiet possession of the town for three days. On the morning of the fourth they were aroused by the drums and bugles of a Spanish force consisting of 700 cavalry from San Antonio, and volunteers from the immediate vicinity, commanded by Francisco Perez, and Fernando Rodrigues. These troops had with them four cannon, and, crossing the San Antonio River, attacked Long, but were defeated and driven back with severe loss. The Spanish commanders then sent in a message saying that they did not wish to shed blood, and if Long would surrender he would be kindly treated. General Long refused to surrender, but expressed his willingness to settle the contest by single combat with any man in the Spanish camp, but this was declined. About this time Garcia, who commanded the fort when it surrendered to Long, fired a pistol shot at the General, the bullet going through his clothing and making a slight wound on the side of his body.

The battle was now renewed, and kept up for two hours. The Spanish soldiers occupied housetops, and were protected by palisades. The Americans during the engagement with their rifles dealt death to all who exposed themselves on the roofs.

The Spaniards again sounded a parley, and sent in the following message: "We have made a mistake, we thought you were royalists. We are patriots too. We wish to receive you as friends."

General Long then asked them why they were fighting under the Spanish flag. "Because," they said, "there is a large Spanish force near at hand, and we wished to deceive them if it became necessary."

Matters remained in this condition for two days, when they succeeded in deceiving Long and inducing him to receive them into the fort as friends. Under the pretext

of quieting the fears of the women and children of Goliad they next induced him to lay down his arms. It is a surprise to some that General Long was deceived by this ruse in view of the well known perfidy and inhumanity that at all previous times marked the conduct of the royalist commanders towards Revolutionists. We must, however, take into consideration that he was expecting large accessions to his force of patriots—that likely Milam, Tres Palacios and others had been successful in their venture, and the flames of revolution were spreading over Mexico and that his dreams of conquest were about to be realized. The tragedy of the Alamo and Goliad had not as yet been enacted, and cut off from all communication, knew not that at this time Milam and his compatriots had also been taken at Tampico and were now in durance vile. If General Long had discovered their true character after they had gained admission to the fort, and seeing no chance to fight them successfully, might have given up the guns of his men to avoid a massacre, which would have ensued had he refused to comply with their request, as they, now in vast superior numbers, had possession of the fort.

By the terms of the agreement, General Long was to have an escort to conduct him to Tres Palacios and his men were to follow, when he sent back an express with an order to that effect.

As soon as the Americans laid down their arms, the Spaniards embraced them warmly, professing sincere friendship. Horses and escort were provided, and Long, Burns and John Austin were sent forward to San Antonio. The Americans remaining at Goliad were ordered into line and each man required to give his name, age and place of nativity, for the purpose, they said, that they might be assigned places of residence among the families in the town. The house in which they were assembled was then suddenly surrounded by a large party of soldiers, the bells

rang, loud huzzas were heard outside, and they were told that they were prisoners. They were then removed to a filthy prison and fed with beef and half cooked corn, producing a sickness from which Patton and Eagan died. They were then hurried on to San Antonio. After remaining there three days, they were sent with General Long, Burns and Austin, under a strong guard, to Laredo, where in February or March, 1820, they were transferred from the control of Perez to that of a younger and more humane officer.

At Laredo they were detained for a considerable time, but were kindly treated. They were finally conducted to Monterey, where General Lopez, royalist commander of the Eastern Province, had his headquarters.

After a time General Long, Burns and Austin were allowed to proceed to the City of Mexico, and arrived there in October, 1821, just as Iturbide's government was organized, and they were received and treated as friends.

Iturbide was the commander of the revolutionists against the Spanish royalists, or adherents of the King of Spain, and was now in the ascendancy. Here, also, in the City of Mexico were Milam, Tres Palacios and others who had been sent there from Tampico after their capture, but all were now released by Iturbide. The other followers of Long still being at Monterey, but no longer prisoners. General Long speedily won many friends. Tres Palacios was greatly honored, receiving the appointment of Governor of Texas, but soon manifested a jealous and hostile spirit towards General Long, which to some extent for a while marked the demeanor of President Iturbide also. Soon after this, while General Long was just entering the Old Inquisition building on a visit to the Commissioner from Chili, he was confronted by a soldier and shot and instantly killed on March 24, 1822.

The friends of General Long believed that the soldier

was a hired assassin of Tres Palacios, and Milam, Christy and John Austin indignantly left the city and rejoined their friends at Monterey. To them they freely expressed the belief that Tres Palacios instigated the murder of their commander. It was resolved to avenge Long's death upon the anticipated arrival of Tres Palacios to Texas, but Wilson and Miller, two of their companions, betrayed them. These two men secretly repaired to Saltillo where they expected Tres Palacios, and warned him of the impending danger; Milam, Christy and Austin and their associates were at once arrested and conveyed to the City of Mexico by way of Saltillo, San Luis Potosi and Queretaro, proceeding by slow marches and stopping a few days in those towns. At the capital they were cast into prison, where they remained ten months.

It will also be remembered that the traitor nephew of Tres Palacios was executed by General Long at Bolivar Point, and no doubt the new Texas Governor was at the bottom of the assassination of the brave and gallant Long.

Following the successful installment of Iturbide's government, the Congress of the United States, on the recommendation of President Monroe, on the 4th of May, 1822, acknowledged the independence of Mexico; whereupon, the President ordered Joel R. Poinsett, of South Carolina, then recently appointed envoy to Chili, to pass through Mexico while en route to his mission, make careful observations and inquire and report on the condition of the country.

Mr. Poinsett, learning the facts connected with Long's expedition and the imprisonment of his countrymen, secured their unconditional release, and an escort for them to Tampico where, by his instructions, the United States sloop of war "John Adams" was in waiting to convey them home, the officers furnishing them with clothing and money.

In winding up this sketch of the unfortunate expedition of General Long, our minds now turn back to the lonely wife left at Bolivar Point, deserted by all except one faithful little servant girl—waiting, waiting, waiting, to hear some tidings or get some assurance from the man she loved, who told her to remain there, and to whom she was so true and faithful. In another sketch we will dwell upon this sad history more in detail.

CHAPTER VI.

MRS. JANE H. LONG, THE MOTHER OF TEXAS.

Mrs. Jane Herbert Long, called "The Mother of Texas," was born on the 23rd day of July, 1798, in Clark County, the State of Maryland. Her father was General William McCall Wilkinson, of the United States Army, and her mother was Annie Herbert Dent. They were married February the 24th, 1774, and Jane Herbert was their tenth child. One of her sisters, Barbara, was born in June, 1784, and she married a Mr. Wood. He died and she married Alexander Calvitt, December 18th, 1814, and she died December 19th, 1858, in Brazoria County, Texas, where her husband also died. The mother of Mrs. Jane Long died when she was an infant, and she was raised by her sister, Mrs. Calvitt, at Natchez, Miss., where she received her education, her father most of the time being in the army. After the battle of New Orleans, fought on the 8th of January, 1815, in which the British army was defeated and sailed away, Miss Jane Wilkinson met and became acquainted with Dr. James Long, who was a surgeon in the army of General Andrew Jackson, and as such participated in the battle of New Orleans, and such was his daring on that historic field that General Jackson called him the "Young Lion." He formed a strong attachment for the accomplished Miss Jane Wilkinson and asked her hand in marriage. She reciprocated the feeling, and gave her heart and promised her hand to the brave and handsome young surgeon and physician, and on the 14th day of May, 1815, they were married and took up their abode at the fine plantation called Walnut Hills, owned by Dr. Long, near Natchez. Here for a few years, and the only

time during her married life, Mrs. Long enjoyed the peace and quiet of a happy home. Here a daughter was born, Annie Herbert Long, on the 26th of November, 1816.

Ill-fated hour when Dr. Long became enthused and carried away with the popular idea then prevalent among many noted men around Natchez, of the conquest of Northern Mexico, which then included the vast country of Texas and other provinces and all under the dominion of Spain. Dr. Long subscribed of his means liberally to help raise funds to defray the expenses of an expedition, and at a public and enthusiastic gathering in Natchez made a stirring speech in favor of it, but at the time had not the remotest idea of being its leader, but expressed his willingness to accompany it. It was understood that Colonel Adair, of Kentucky, was to be the commander, but that gentleman declined the honor, and it was then tendered to Dr. Long and he accepted it. He lost no time in preparing and raising men to march with him into Texas for the purpose of wresting that province from the King of Spain. He crossed the Sabine River with a sufficient force to take possession of the old Spanish town of Nacogdoches, and there set up his government, distributing his forces at various points. We cannot tell what the feelings of Mrs. Long were, or what she suffered mentally in regard to the action of her spirited young husband, or whether her feelings were in accord or not with his plans, but one thing we do know, that she bravely and devotedly followed him and shared his triumphs and reverses until, finally, left alone with her child and servant girl at Bolivar Point, on the coast of Texas.

When General Long started to Texas with his little army he left his wife and two children (another daughter, Rebecca, being born June 16, 1819), with her sister, Mrs. Calvitt, until he should establish himself in Texas, and when that was accomplished he sent one of his gallant cap-

tains, Randall Jones, to convey her to Nacogdoches, leaving the children still at Mrs. Calvitt's, the youngest dying soon afterwards. This journey was accomplished on horseback. Here she was again left by her husband, but under the protection of brave and devoted men, while he went to the Island of Galveston to confer with the pirate, Lafitte, and to induce him, if possible, to aid him in his conquest. The pirate chief refused his assistance, and General Long commenced his return trip to Nacogdoches, but before reaching that place learned the startling and unexpected news that his forces had been scattered and many killed by a Spanish army under Colonel Perez. We know not in what manner Mrs. Long escaped the vengeance of Perez, except that faithful followers of her ill-starred husband conveyed her to a place of safety beyond the Sabine River, where she remained until joined by General Long. He was not discouraged by this unfortunate catastrophe, but resolutely went to work raising means and enlisting men to further prosecute the war. Men of wealth and standing at New Orleans came to his rescue, and he was soon ready to start again with a small force to Texas. This time his wife and child and a colored servant woman, named Kian, who belonged to Mrs. Long, accompanied the expedition. They coasted in boats around the shores of Texas and landed at Bolivar Point, opposite Galveston Island, in the summer of 1820. Here about seventy-five of the scattered forces of Long had assembled, and these, added to the force which came with the General, made a showing, as he thought, which would justify him in recommencing hostilities. Here they built a kind of mud fort and planted a cannon upon it, and soon after the command set out for the west to further prosecute the war. In the previous history of the expedition, we stated what befell General Long and his men, and will not recapitulate that again here. Mrs. Long was not left alone at Bolivar Point by

her husband; but, on the contrary, at first had pleasant associates, her companions, besides her own household, being Dr. Edgar and his wife and the wife of Dr. Allen (the latter having gone with General Long) and four soldiers. The time passed agreeably enough for a time under existing circumstances. They enjoyed the scenery, fished, and watched for distant sails to come in sight on the Gulf, a rare occurrence then since the pirates had gone away from the Island of Galveston.

As the weeks and months passed away, and no tidings came from General Long, the inmates of the fort became restless and anxious to leave, all except Mrs. Long. Her companions finally begged her to consent to leave, but she refused again and again, until when they determined to leave, and in answer to their last appeal she said, “No, my husband left me here and he said he would come back, and I will remain faithful to the trust, and if I should not survive he will at least find my bones here when he returns.” Noble, devoted woman! They left her, and we are unable to put on paper all that she suffered in mind and body during that long and severe winter of 1820 and 1821. She was bound to know, from the long silence of her husband, that something had gone wrong with him, or a message would have come from the west to her. But still she waited and hoped, and day after day gazed out upon the lonesome sea and along the desolate coast, with no friends or protectors for a hundred miles or more around and no companionship except her own sad thoughts, that of her little girl, Annie, the servant girl, Kian, and the dog, “Galveston.” Kian was very devoted to her, and seemed perfectly willing to die for her at any time if necessary. One day she told Kian that they were acting Robinson Crusoe now and for her to go out along the beach and see if she could discover any foot prints in the sand. She did so and soon came running back and informed Mrs. Long that

she had seen moccasin tracks. This denoted the presence of Indians and, no doubt, they had during some night reconnoitered the place. Mrs. Long never allowed anything to frighten her, and, being possessed of a red skirt she fastened that to a pole and displayed it on the fort for a flag, as if it was manned by warlike men.

She knew not what day or what hour the fierce Craunkaway Indians would come and murder them, which she had reason to expect. The pirates were gone and the Indians again inhabited Galveston Island, and she knew their deadly animosity toward the whites. She saw the French schooner wrecked and the crew butchered by them before her husband left, and he had gone to the island with a portion of his men and fought them, and was compelled to retreat to his boats and come back to the Point.

There were firearms at the fort, and Mrs. Long knew how to use them, as well as fire the cannon, and she was determined to fight them as best she could if they came, and one morning they did so—canoe loads of them, painted and decorated for war, and pulling straight for the Point. Her courage, however, remained in this trying time. She was the daughter of a soldier, of a general. Calmly telling Kian and her little daughter not to be frightened, she boldly and with a firm step entered the little fort, manned the cannon, directed it, applied the match and fired. The boom of the gun echoed far out across the bay and along the shore, and when the smoke cleared away the Indian canoes were no longer together, and each oarsman pulling with all his might back to the island. Mrs. Long loaded the cannon again, and it was some time before an Indian was seen again, but once more they ventured, not very near, however, and a shot from the fort frightened them away again. No doubt had the Indians known that only the weak hand of a woman was the sole defender of the fort they would have taken it and massacred the inmates,

but this fact they were ignorant of, and the courage and self-possession of Mrs. Long saved them.

The winter of 1820 and 1821 was one of unusual severity for this climate, and incredible as it may seem to some who live on the Texas coast, the bay was frozen over, and during the time Mrs. Long saw a large bear cross on the ice from the main land to Galveston Island, moving slowly and serenely along his way, without in the least being disturbed in any manner, although followed and barked at by the dog “Galveston” for some distance.

Provisions gave out, and for months Mrs. Long and those with her had to subsist on salted fish, but fortunately fish were in abundance and easily obtained. Hundreds of them were frozen and Kian would break the ice and get them, packing them down in the brine of mackerel barrels. They also had hooks and lines with which to get a supply of fish in good weather. Only once since 1820 has the bay been frozen over, and that occurred several years ago—about 1886.

One more terrible ordeal this brave woman had to pass through while at Bolivar Point—another child was born, a little girl—December the 21st, 1821. This frail little child was named Mary James, but its earthly career was short, dying at four years of age. What a sad Christmas to these isolated ones, and this was the second they had passed here, but evidently the first was spent in company with those whom Dr. Long had left with his wife. It seems that the rude “mud” fort, as it was called, was not constructed so as to furnish shelter and protection in inclement weather, but for defense and to mount the cannon on. Mrs. Long lived in a tent, and so severe was the winter, and so much snow fell and accumulated on the tent that the top was weighted down so as almost to touch the beds on which they had to sleep and finally broke in, and it was during this time, and in this snow and ice-laden tent that

the child was born. We will, however, no longer dwell on these sad scenes. Early in 1822 two white men came to Bolivar Point, the first Mrs. Long had seen in nearly a year, and she joyfully recognized her faithful friends, Captain Randall Jones and his brother, James. They, however, brought her the sad news of her husband's death, and had come to convey her away. With a sad heart she made ready to accompany them and bid farewell to the desolate, wave-lashed shore of Bolivar Point. They went to San Antonio, where Mrs. Long remained a short time, and then continued the journey on to the City of Mexico, where she viewed the spot on which her unfortunate husband breathed his last, struck down by the bullet of an assassin. Why she went on this long trip, what incidents happened by the way, and who accompanied her, unless it was the Jones brothers, we cannot tell. She, her little girl, and Kian made the trip on the backs of Mexican burros.

The Mexican authorities treated her kindly, and from Colonel Ben Milam, one of her husband's companions, she learned the particulars of her husband's death. He told her that General Long had a presentiment of his death, and that he walked the floor all night before he was killed on the following morning. When Colonel Milam insisted on him going to bed, he said, "No, Milam, I cannot rest, I feel that I will never see my family again, and I want you to be a brother to my wife and a father to my children." The promise was given and Colonel Milam faithfully kept his promise to General Long, and aided his bereaved and widowed wife to the extent of his ability, which was at times interrupted by being thrown into prison himself, until finally he met his death at San Antonio while storming that city with a force of Texans in 1835. His remains rest in Milam Square, San Antonio, and a handsome monument has been erected there to his memory.

Mrs. Long returned to Texas and took up her abode in Brazoria, county seat at one time of Brazoria County. Here she opened a boarding house and took in washing, the latter work being ably attended to by Kian. Another sad feature connected with this truly sad history was the fact that a debt hung over Mrs. Long, contracted by her unfortunate husband in order to raise means to further his enterprise, and Kian, the faithful servant, was under mortgage for this debt, and was finally taken to cancel it. Mrs. Long now went to work with renewed energies in order to save money enough to buy the devoted woman, Kian, back. She was, however, relieved from this burden by the kind-hearted General Peck, an old schoolmate and former suitor for the hand of Mrs. Long. who, on learning of the circumstances, bought the servant and restored her to her former mistress. Before leaving Brazoria Mrs. Long saved money enough to buy a negro man, and soon after moved to Richmond, Fort Bend County, where her grant of land was located, all of the middle and southern portion of the city now occupying it. Mrs. Long now bought another negro man and had a nice farm put in cultivation, and from that time on to the day of her death had all that she wished as far as the comforts of this life were concerned. She also started another boarding house in Richmond, which was well patronized. Mrs. Long had several offers of marriage from noted and worthy men, but she refused them all, saying that she could never give her hand and heart to but one man. When Kian died her mistress mourned her truly and gave her a nice burial. The devoted servant left four children, James, Fed, Clarisa and Lizzie. Clarisa had a daughter also named Kian, who was the waiting maid of Mrs. Long, and attended upon her every want.

LAST DAYS OF MRS. LONG.

When Mrs. Long became old and feeble she seldom left home, but one morning told Kian to hitch the horse to the buggy and take her driving for the last time. They first went to the home of Doctor Ferris, and that polite old gentleman seeing Mrs. Long at his door in her buggy was agreeably surprised and came hastily to assist her in alighting. She refused his aid, however, saying, "Doctor, let me get out myself, you might let me fall." A pleasant and agreeable hour was passed in conversation upon the various topics of the day, and then she was driven to the home of her granddaughter, Mrs. Mary Miles, where she remained some time, and then at her request was taken to the home of Clarisa, her former servant and mother of Kian. Although the latter was free, she never ceased to wait upon Mrs. Long, and she still lives in Richmond, being known far and near as "Aunt Ki," and she also keeps a boarding and lodging house, but for whites only. From the house of Clarisa Mrs. Long was driven to an ice cream parlor, where she partook of some cream, and then ordered the carriage home. After entering the house she sat in a chair for a short time, said she felt bad, and had taken her last ride. She was undressed soon after and placed in bed and failed to get up on the following morning, but lingered a month, getting up occasionally and being dressed, but not leaving the room. Toward the last said she was just waiting on the Lord, that she was ready and had tried to do her duty all her life—told Kian to be good, and that she did not want any one when she was dead to wash and dress her and lay her out but Kian and Clarisa. Thus she died happy, and in the full hope of the resurrection, on the 30th day of December, 1880, aged 82 years and 6 months. She was buried in the cemetery at Richmond and a nice

monument erected over the grave. A large concourse of people attended the burial of this "Mother of Texas" and showed her all the respect possible. She always treated her servants kindly and would allow no one to correct or chastise them. Mrs. Long was a true heroine and one of the most estimable women and noble mothers known to the early annals of Texas. The only surviving daughter of Mrs. Long, Annie Herbert Long, married Edward Winston at Richmond, and they had one child, James Edward. She survived Mr. Winston and married the Hon. James S. Sullivan and they had four children—Mary, Sarah (the latter dying at 13 years of age), and two who died in infancy. Mary married Mr. J. W. Miles, of Richmond, and lives in Beeville, a widow. Captain Sidney Winston, of Richmond, is the great grandson of Mrs. Jane Long, he being the son of James Edward Winston. The other children were: Lilly, Roberta, and Eddy. Lilly married Dr. John L. Dillard, of Richmond, now dead. She still survives and lives in Richmond. Roberta married Jorden Farmer, no children, both living in Richmond. Mary A. Miles, of Beeville, granddaughter of Mrs. Long, has three children, Sullivan, Annie and Collier. The first named married a Miss Black, and Annie married Benny Cochran, now dead. Collier married at Beeville. .

Captain Sidney Winston, one of the solid citizens and representative men of Richmond, married Miss Kate Blakely, and they have two children, Nettie Laura and Blakely.

Mrs. Sullivan (Annie Herbert Long) died at Richmond June the 1st, 1870, her mother surviving her ten years.

CHAPTER VII.

GEN. W. M. WILKINSON.

General William M. Wilkinson, the father of Mrs. Jane Long, was a distinguished officer in the United States Army of the war of 1812. When Aaron Burr, in 1806, was contemplating the conquest and revolutionizing of Northern Mexico, which then included Texas, his base of operations being Blennerhassetts Island, General Wilkinson was ordered with a part of the United States Army to watch his movements, and also the Spanish army who were coming toward the Sabine River to meet Burr's invasion. Thomas Jefferson was President at this time, and it was the policy of the United States Government to prevent any armed expedition from leaving her borders for such a conquest. The Spanish government had notification of the intention of Burr, and at that time, not recognizing the Sabine River as the boundary line between the Spanish possessions and those of the United States, moved an army toward that point. Late in the spring, some time in June, Generals Herrera and Cordero, with 1,200 veteran Spanish soldiers, reached Nacogdoches. Governor Claiborne, of Louisiana, called out the militia and placed them at the disposal of General Wilkinson also, and he hastened toward the Sabine with all of these available forces from New Orleans. Negotiations had failed as to the question of boundary and part of the Spanish army had already crossed the border when Wilkinson arrived and confronted them. Both commanders were defiant, and for a time a pitched battle seemed to be unavoidable. The American commander told the Spanish generals plainly that they must recross the Sabine, that they would not be allowed

over there to fight Aaron Burr, or under any other pretense. The Americans were anxious to fight and chafed under the delay of a parley, which was finally held by the opposing leaders, and the difficulty settled without bloodshed. They entered into a treaty of the "neutral ground," agreeing that a narrow strip of country between the Arroyo Hondo and the Sabine should be respected as "neutral" and occupied by neither government until a definite treaty fixed the boundary between the two nations. The Spanish army then recrossed the Sabine and retired beyond this strip of country, much to the disgust of the American troops, who wished to whip them for crossing the line.

Hearing rumors that Burr was descending the Mississippi River with his expedition, General Wilkinson, on arriving at New Orleans, commenced vigorous preparations to oppose the passage of Burr. A flotilla was prepared and the forts near New Orleans were put in a state of defense. He called out the militia of Louisiana again and also of Mississippi, and proclaimed martial law. He arrested and held in custody every one suspected of being in sympathy with Burr. The whole country was patrolled by General Wilkinson's guards. Aaron Burr, however, did not come, and was afterwards arrested and tried for conspiracy against the United States Government, but was acquitted. These details do not belong here and only mention is made of the part taken in it by the father of the noble and distinguished lady whose remains rest in the cemetery at Richmond, Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER VIII.

WALTER W. LITTLE.

Walter W. Little was born in Fort Bend County, on the last day of October, 1828, in what was then called the Fort settlement in the bend of the Brazos, where Richmond now is.

William Little, father of the subject of this sketch, was a native of Pennsylvania, but came to Texas from Missouri as part of the colony of Stephen F. Austin in 1821. His headright league was located twelve miles below the present town of Richmond, on the east side of the Brazos River, opposite the league of Henry Jones.

In November, 1821, the Fort, from which the County of Fort Bend takes its name, was erected in the bend of the Brazos River, north of Richmond, about where the McFarland place is now. The river makes a bend here of eleven miles around by two miles across it. The fort was built by William Little, William Smithers, Charles Beard, Joseph Polly and Henry Holsten. It was constructed of logs cut from the river bottom and consisted of two log cabins with hall between, and was intended for shelter, and in which to keep supplies, as well as defense, in case of an Indian attack.

Previous to this time General Austin had visited the country on the Colorado, Guadalupe, Brazos and other places to select locations for his colonists, many of whom were en route from the States of the American Union, and some had already arrived. Having selected the great bend of the Brazos on the west side as a suitable place to plant a colony, he left the five young men above mentioned, to build the fort for the benefit of the first installment, which

was to form the nucleus of the settlement. The first actual settler, however, there was William Morton, whose head-right league was located on the east bank of the Brazos and his labor on the west side near the fort.

The next settlers to come were Henry Jones, John Rabb, Joe Kuykendall, John Jones, James Jones, Randall Jones, Hall Roddy (a single man), and one other named Gash. Most of these came in to the colony among the first installment, but some of them had first stopped further up the country about San Felipe. Randolph Foster had been here in camp before any colonists arrived, and Henry Jones, Randall Jones and others had passed back and forth over the country. In 1823 many more came and grants were located in various places up and down the river on both sides. Also in 1823 a band of coast Indians, known as Craunkaways, made a raid on another band of Indians living on the Trinity River, and succeeded in carrying off some of their stock. Mr. Little thinks these Trinity Indians were Choctaws, while others are of the opinion that they were Cooshatties or Osages. Be that as it may, they followed the Craunks and surprised a band of them at a point of timber two miles below the present site of Richmond and quite a battle was fought, in which the Craunks were defeated and all killed except probably one, as some think, but Mr. Little is under the impression that all were killed. The bones of the slain Indians remained there many years.

In 1832 J. H. Pickens came and rented the farm of Henry Jones, thoroughly cultivating and making a fine crop, but in 1833 a great and disastrous flood came which swept the Brazos valley for seven miles on each side of the river, overflowing into Buffalo Bayou, and destroying all crops and drowning all stock in the bottom. All of the stock of William Little was destroyed, and also two of his negroes drowned by the upsetting of a skiff.

In 1836, when the Mexican army came to Fort Bend, Walter Little, then eight years of age, was at his father's farm and remembers that many neighbors and families gathered there, among whom were John H. Pickens, Joseph Johnson, the Thompsons, Mudds and Wicksons. After consulting with one another as to the best course to pursue under existing circumstances, it was thought advisable that those who had families to take care of to move on with them and keep out of reach of the Mexican army. All, however, did not go together. The Johnsons, Mudds and Thompsons took the Stafford road, while the Littles and others took the Shipman road, and entered a dense cane bottom and went into camp, hoping the Mexicans would not discover their retreat, which they did not. In three or four days three Texas scouts, Henry Karnes, John Shipman and John Morton, came to them and told them to stay where they were, as the Mexican army was now ahead of them. Also about this time Joe Kuykendall and John R. Fenn and some of the women from Morton's at the bend, made their way through the dense bottom and joined them, but soon went on towards Harrisburg. Kuykendall and young Fenn had been captured by the Mexicans, but had made their escape. Before this the steamboat "Yellowstone" was heard coming down the river and Walter Little and others went to look at it, and Mr. Little says it passed so near them that he could see the bullet holes where the Mexicans fired into it when the boat passed Fort Bend. He says the captain had set up cotton bales on end around the pilot house for protection. During the flight, he says, of the people from Fort Bend Mrs. Gil. Kuykendall lost her baby and did not see it again for six weeks. It was carried off in another party by her sister.

While in camp in the cane brake measles broke out among the people, and they scattered away, most of them back to their homes, and in a few days the famous scout,

Deaf Smith, came and told them to rest easy, as a great battle had been fought at the San Jacinto River, in which the Mexican army had been nearly annihilated, and Santa Anna captured. Great rejoicing was now indulged in all over the country.

Mr. Little remembers when Deaf Smith died, and thinks it was at a hotel in Richmond. He had taken up his abode there in 1837, and he and Gail Borden had formed a partnership in the land business, but he died soon after. He says that Smith was a medium sized man, hair partly gray, and about forty years of age.

On the 23rd of December, 1858, Mr. Little married Miss Sarah R. Wilson, daughter of Dr. Hugh Wilson, of Louisburg, Virginia. She died in 1870, and he afterwards married Miss M. A. Laird, his present wife. William Little, his father, died the 8th of July, 1841, on his farm below Richmond. He laid off the town of Richmond in 1836.

Mr. Walter Little has a family relic which has been in their family for more than 100 years. It is a pair of gold-rimmed spectacles of antique make, which was given to his grandfather, John Little, by General Horatio Gates, of the American Army of the Revolution of 1776. John Little was major of artillery in the army of General Gates, and the occasion of the presentation was after a battle, in which the eyesight of Major Little was injured by powder, and the spectacles were given on that account.

Mr. Little now resides with his family at Eagle Lake, Colorado County.

CHAPTER IX.

HENRY JONES.

Henry Jones, one of the "Old Three Hundred" of Austin's colony was born in Madison County, Virginia, near the "Blue Ridge," in 1798. In 1817, when but nineteen years of age, he left home in company with his brother, John, and went on a trip of adventure. They came down the Mississippi in a flat boat to New Orleans, and there laid in supplies and ammunition and returned to the mouth of White River and was here joined by Martin Varner, Creason and two other young men of like temperament as themselves. They now laid their plans to explore strange countries and became trappers and hunters and commenced at this place, trapping for fur animals, and killing deer, bear and other game for their pelts. In this way they remained two years, traveling over parts of Arkansas, Indian Territory and other places, part of the time being in camp on the Washita River, trading with friendly Indians.

During all of these rambles, and having a good time generally, they had not met or been molested by hostile Indians. Finally, however, while in camp on a tributary of the Washita, they discovered signs of hostile Indians. They detected that these Indians were not friendly by seeing where they had killed deer and other game, but could never get sight of them; while, on the other hand, if they had been friendly disposed, they would have come to their camp. The boys had a dog along which they had trained to growl, but not to bark, when anything unusual disturbed him. One morning, about daybreak, not long after these Indian signs had been discovered, the dog awoke

them by growling and walking to and fro between their pallets and the log fire, which had been replenished through the night. Varner raised up, and, seeing a band of Indians near the camp and about to attack them, said, "Boys, here are Indians," and raised his gun to fire at them, but before he could do so the Indians, who were also armed with guns, fired a volley into their midst and wounded all of them except Creason. Varner was shot in both wrists and his gun stock shot in two. Henry Jones was struck with a bullet which went through his body, just grazing the backbone, as he sprang up and was stooping to get his gun, and the other two, whose names cannot now be given, were severely wounded, but not as bad as Jones. All now ran away to save themselves, if possible, by flight. Henry Jones ran about one hundred and fifty yards, tripped in some vines or briars and fell; the others, thinking that he had fallen dead from the effects of his wound, ran on and left him. He thought his time had come, and lay there, face down, for a few moments, imagining he could hear the Indians breathing close behind him; but as they did not come at once to scalp him or run a lance through his body he raised his head to look, and none were in sight. With renewed hope now, although badly hurt and bleeding profusely, he regained his feet and ran on after his companions, but they had disappeared in the timber and brush, and he feared to call to them on account of the still near proximity of the Indians. They had another camp fifteen miles below and this was the objective point now of the routed hunters.

About noon Henry Jones ascended a hill and discovered his companions in the valley below. He yelled, to attract their attention to himself, as he was nearly exhausted, but they ran, thinking it was the Indians still after them. In running and looking back over their shoulders, however, they soon discovered that it was their wounded compan-

ion, and then stopped and waited until he joined them and all went on together. They had to cross a deep creek to reach their camp, and as Henry Jones could not swim he held on to Varner, who was six feet and six inches in height and could wade it, and thus passed over safely.

On reaching their camp they remained a long time, dressing their wounds as best they could until they healed and they were able to travel again. The first thing they did then was to go back to the camp where the Indians attacked them. Their little dog had never showed up and they were satisfied he was dead, which was verified on reaching the spot, by finding his remains in the camp. It is likely the dog was struck down by a shot when the volley was fired, but the Indians had also terribly mangled his body—in revenge, probably, for causing them to loose the scalps of the five young hunters, by his timely warning growls, as otherwise they could have approached and placed the muzzles of their guns against their heads and made certain of their destruction. The Indians had taken everything in the camp except that which was the most valuable—the furs and pelts; but it was not their fault that these were left, but the foresight of the young hunters. They had dug a hole in which they placed them, filled it carefully and compactly, and then made their camp fire over the spot. After this unfortunate affair the young men disposed of their furs and pelts and returned to civilization. They did not remain long, however, in the settled districts. Stephen F. Austin was making up a colony to settle in the wilds of Texas, and the two Jones brothers and Varner joined it and came with the first installment, first settling in what is now Washington County. Varner afterwards had his league of land located in Brazoria County, on what is now "Varner's Creek." He was killed there some years later by a Mexican; after receiving the mortal wound, he induced some of his friends to catch the Mexican

and bring him within his reach, and he then and there, with a sharp knife, cut him in pieces—actually skinning him alive from head to foot.

In Red River County Henry Jones married Miss Nancy Styles. William Jones, their first child, was born in 1822, in what is now Washington County, near the present town of Independence. They had no house completed at that time, and this child, the first in Austin's colony, was born in camp under a live oak tree. In this same year Henry Jones and others came on down into what is now Fort Bend County, looking at the country, as yet having located no land, and one day on the Brazos River, thirteen miles below the present town of Richmond, they dismounted, and hitching their horses, went down under the bluff to get some water. While there they were very much surprised to hear oars striking the sides of a canoe, hid from view by a bend in the river. At first they thought it might be Indians and looked well to their firearms, but when the party came in view it proved to be a white man and a negro. The white man was Captain Randall Jones. He landed and the party had dinner together. Captain Jones and Henry Jones, on learning each others' name, had a long talk, but could trace no kinship. Randall Jones' boat was loaded with one barrel of whiskey and several boxes of tobacco bound for Fort Bend, where he had located and settled.

Henry Jones, liking the country, located his land on the Brazos River eight miles below the present town of Richmond. He wanted, and had selected a league of land just below the present town, but learning that Mrs. Jane Long wished this location for her grant, gave way to her and went further down the river. Before improving his place, however, he settled in the bend, and during this occupancy he and others made a journey to the mouth of the Brazos after salt.

In the meanwhile a band of friendly Indians, from the Trinity River, had a battle with the Craunkaway Indians, one mile below the present town of Richmond, in which the Trinity Indians were the victors, killing ten of the others and taking their scalps. Some think that these Indians from the Trinity were instigated by the white settlers to come and attack the Craunkaways and kill or drive them away in order to get rid of them, as they were a constant menace to the colonists of Austin. Others believe that the Craunks had made a raid on the Trinity Indians, who were likely Cooshatties or Osages, and carried off some of their stock, and the pursuit and battle was to redress their own wrongs. The main camp of the Craunks was on Big Creek, seven miles below Richmond, and it was to this place the Indians from the Trinity were making their way, when they fell in with this band, which they fought and killed all of them except one. Now, about dark on the same day that this battle was fought, Henry Jones and his party were getting back from the mouth of the Brazos and were in three miles of Fort Bend, when, in the dusk of gathering darkness they saw an Indian pass them on a pony at full speed, making his way towards Big Creek where his tribe was in camp, to inform them of the presence of the hostile Indians from the Trinity, he being the only one left to tell the tale. Soon after a terrible storm set in with such violence and floods of rain that Mr. Jones and his party were compelled to leave the prairie and seek shelter in a point of timber, where they spent the night. This storm also prevented the Trinity Indians from getting to their enemies, and they went on up the river to the white settlements. The Craunkaways, however, being warned, fled from their camp and left the country, going west across the Colorado.

Next morning, after the storm, when Henry Jones arrived at home, he was very much surprised to find his

yard full of Indians and his wife alone, except their two little boys, James and William. They, however, met him with extended hands of friendship, told him of the battle, and said they wanted beef and then have a war dance. The beef was furnished and the feasting and dancing commenced, which lasted several days, and Mr. Jones had to kill two more beeves before he could get rid of them, but finally they mounted their ponies and went off yelling toward their country. While their dancing was in progress the scalps of their enemies were hanging on a pole, around which they circled, sang and yelled. Also during this time Mr. Morton, near by, had two Craunkaway Indians—a squaw and little boy; the Trinity Indians hearing of it, some of them mounted their ponies, and, dashing up to Morton's house, killed the squaw and carried the boy away captive, saying they were going to make a good warrior out of him.

During the passage of the Mexican army through Fort Bend County and the families were fleeing before it, Henry Jones was sick and had been for some time and was hauled in a wagon on a mattress in the "Runaway," and was therefore unable to take any part in the battle of San Jacinto and many other stirring scenes which were transpiring at that time. His family at that time consisted of his wife and five or six children. They came back over the battlefield of San Jacinto and viewed the dead Mexicans, and while doing so discovered an old sow eating one of them. Some of the Jones boys picked up scopets and sabres and brought them home. These relics were lost when the Henry Jones homestead was burned in 1888. At the time, however, the property belonged to Mrs. Mary M. Ryon, and the guns and swords had been left there in the garrett. Mrs. Jones died in 1850 at the "Old Prairie Home," and Mr. Jones at the same place in 1861, both being buried in the old family burying ground, side by side. They had

twelve children, and all lived to be grown, except one, and all married except two. The children were: William Styles, James, Mary Moore, John Henry, Hetty Ellen, Virginia, Elizabeth R., Susan E., Wiley Powell, Emily, Laura H., and Thomas Walter.

William, the first born and the first in Austin's colony, married Mary Barnett and died in 1875. His children were: Fannie, Thomas, William, Nancy, Sarah, Johnny and James. The two last named and Thomas are still living. James married twice, first Miss Martha Little, and of this union only one child lived, Walter, who married Miss Archie Davis. His second wife was Miss Fanny Hill and only one son by her lived, James Jones, who married a Miss Brown. He died in 1857. Mary married Colonel William Ryon, one of the captains in the Mier expedition. They had ten children and only three lived to be grown. James married Miss Josie Dagnell; Lizzie married Judge J. H. P. Davis, now a banker in Richmond; Mildred married first J. B. Wheat; he died and her second husband was Freeman I. Booth. John Henry never married, and died about 1850. Hetty married four times, first, James Roper; second, Samuel Wheat; third, Henry McElroy, and last Robert Hill. Virginia married John Barnett. Elizabeth was married twice, first, Seth Little, last Charles S. McElroy. Susan married Richard W. Neeley, now residing in Kentucky. Wiley P. married twice, two sisters, Sallie and Mattie Bailey. Emily died at four years of age. Laura married Lafayette Herbert, and resides in Montgomery, Alabama. Thomas W. married Miss Nancy Slavin. He died and she now resides in Kentucky.

When one of the daughters of Henry Jones married he gave her, as the saying is, a "big send off" or "blow-out." Everybody was invited to the wedding and Jones was prepared to feed them. He had pits dug, over which mutton, veal and pork were barbecued, and a long table

filled with everything that was good which could be procured, and the table was kept spread all the night so that every one could, at any time, eat if they were hungry.

He lived near the public road leading from Richmond to Columbia and Brazoria, and many people, strangers and acquaintances, made his house their stopping place in their travels to and fro, and no one was ever charged a cent for lodging or what their horses ate. The stranger and his horse were as well cared for as that of a bosom friend; it made no difference, his hospitality and generosity reached all alike. People of that day and time were not selfish. As the saying is, they did not worship the "Almighty Dollar." They had plenty. It grew to them naturally. The broad prairies were dotted with their cattle, and when they needed money all they had to do was to round up a bunch of beeves and drive them to the New Orleans market and get the cash for them. Peace to the ashes of these kind of Texans.

CHAPTER X.

JAMES AND HETTY JONES—PART OF THE “OLD THREE HUNDRED” COLONISTS.

James Jones, brother of Captain Randall Jones, was a native of Georgia and came to Texas as one of the first installment of Austin's colonists. The first contract with Stephen F. Austin, made with the Mexican government to bring American colonists to Texas, was for 300 families, and as he afterwards contracted for others, the first was called the “Old Three Hundred.” These were the first ones that crossed the line into Texas, and it was quite an honor and distinction in after years to be known as one of the “Old Three Hundred,” and their descendents to this day are proud of the fact.

The colonists came by different routes and did not arrive at the same time even of this first contract, but James Jones and his brother, Randall, were among the first to arrive and go into camp on the west bank of the Brazos River on January the 1st, 1821, at New Years Creek, now in Washington County. They afterwards settled in Fort Bend County, where their lands were located. On their way to the Brazos these two brothers rescued Mrs. Jane Long at Bolivar Point, who had been left there by her husband, General Long, while he went on his unfortunate expedition, in which he lost his life, the facts of which are more fully explained elsewhere. The James Jones league was located in Fort Bend County near the present town of Rosenberg. Hetty Jones (wife of James Jones) was Miss Hetty Styles, born in Kentucky, and came to Texas with her parents in company with Henry Jones and his family. These were also of the “Old Three Hundred” and came with

the first installment. They, however, moved from Fort Bend County in the early '50s, and settled in Guadalupe County near the San Marcos River, and not far from the boundary line of Caldwell and Guadalupe Counties. Here they prospered and raised a large family, both dying at an advanced age, the wife surviving her husband a number of years. Their children were Thomas, Elizabeth, Robert, Austin (named for Stephen F. Austin), Richard, John (Shack), and Walter (Watt). Thomas married Caroline Boone and died in Guadalupe County. Elizabeth married John Boone and is now dead also. Robert died in Uvalde County, and Richard moved to the Rio Grande, settling at Eagle Pass, and there met with a most tragic death. Several of his small children had excavated a considerable cave in a sandbank and were using it as a playhouse. This bank partly caved in on the children in such a way that they were unable to escape, but their cries soon brought the brave and devoted father to their rescue, but only to die with them. While he was crawling and making his way to them the balance of the bank caved in and all were smothered.

During the civil war the Jones boys made good soldiers. No better sons of the South followed the stars and bars than they. Austin was wounded at "Gaines' Mill," and he also has the distinction of being the man who turned General Lee's horse around and led him back from the front at the Wilderness; at the time, this incident was a most critical one. The battle of the Wilderness was a fearful engagement. Men were falling by thousands on both sides, and the day seemed to be going against the Confederates. General Lee was very solicitous as to the result, and forced his way on horseback ("Old Traveler") to the front, and halted between the contending lines. The Texans discovered him and commenced crying out, "General Lee, to the rear! General Lee, to the

rear!" and refused to charge as long as he was thus exposed, and continued to cry out as above stated. General Lee sat his horse unmoved while the whizzing bullets filled the air around him. At this juncture Austin Jones dropped his musket to the ground and, deliberately advancing to the General, seized his bridle by the bit and led his horse back to the rear. He then picked up his gun, resumed his place in the ranks, and the Texans moved off through the smoke with leveled bayonets upon the Federal line. Austin Jones was a tall man, standing about six feet four inches in height.

Some years ago the question arose as to who it was that turned General Lee's horse around at the Wilderness. Austin Jones had told of the circumstance when first returning from the war, but some others were inclined to claim the honor. Finally Richard Burges, who was also in the battle, but did not witness the incident, wrote to a man in Richmond, Virginia, who he was satisfied knew, and asked him the question. His reply was that the man was a Texan named Jones; that he belonged to the 4th Texas, Hood's Division.

CHAPTER XI.

CAPT. RANDALL JONES.

Capt. Randall Jones, one of the historic characters of Fort Bend County, was born in Columbia County, Georgia, on the 19th of August, 1786. In 1810 he went to Wilkinson County, Mississippi Territory. When the second war with England broke out in 1812 he joined the American army as a private, but such was his energy and gallantry in battle that he received a captain's commission, which he held until near the close of the war, or, to be more exact, until 1814. During this service he fought the battle with Indians known as the "Canoe Fight." An extract from a letter from the volunteer army dated "East bank of the Alabama, November the 25th, 1813," reads thus: "On the 11th inst. Captain Jones, of the twelve months' volunteers, with a detachment of sixty volunteers and militia, marched from Fort Madison for the Alabama, and on the 12th fell in with two parties of Creeks, which he entirely routed and killed nine warriors, without sustaining any loss on his part. Captain Jones and his party deserve the greatest praise and honor for the handsome manner in which the enterprise was conducted." This was but the beginning of the eventful career of Captain Jones.

In the fall of 1814 he came to the Sabine River, and at Gaines' Ferry met with General Toledo, just after his defeat at the Medina. This was the Mexican revolution against Spain, and after the defeat of Toledo at the Medina River, beyond San Antonio, the remnant of his army fled to the Sabine, and there formed a nucleus for another army, inviting Americans or anyone else who were so disposed to join his standard, and overtures to that ef-

fect were made to Captain Jones, but he thought that Toledo's army of about 200 Mexicans, Americans and Indians were rather too ragged and motley a set to join, and therefore declined. Instead he turned merchant, and, going to Natchez, bought \$600 worth of goods, and spent the winter of 1814 and 1815 trading with the Comanche Indians in Texas, who at that time were on friendly terms with the whites.

In 1816 he established a store in Nacogdoches, and traded with the Indians and Mexicans until 1818. In the spring of this year he visited the pirate Lafitte on Galveston Island, for the purpose of buying some negroes of him. The pirates were visiting the coast of Africa and loading their ships with the natives and selling them to the planters of Louisiana and Mississippi. Lafitte's price generally was one dollar per pound for these naked wild Africans. Captain Jones afterwards said that a more courteous and gentlemely man he never met than this pirate chief, in whom he expected to see a rough, uncouth, sullen being. He spent two days and nights on the island as guest of Lafitte, who saw to his every want and comfort, and deported himself as if he was the landlord of a public house.

In 1819 he joined the forces of General James Long at Nacogdoches, where the General was maintaining an independent government, and was acting as governor and commander of the northern forces of Mexico. Here Captain Jones received the title of "Brigade Major," and was entrusted with the mission of conveying Mrs. Long from her sister's, Mrs. Calvitt, on Red River, to her husband, at Nacogdoches, which in due time was accomplished, the entire distance being made on horseback. To give an idea how little was known about the topography of the country at that time, Captain Jones was sent by General Long with a party of twenty-one men to go to *Galveston, at the*

mouth of the Brazos! They struck the Brazos River at the mouth of the Navasota, and there encamped for the purpose of making skiffs in which to complete the journey, but were soon attacked by a Spanish force under Colonel Perez and driven into the woods with nothing to subsist upon. They made their way, however, to a village of friendly Indians on the Trinity, where they obtained provisions, and then went on into Louisiana, as by this time all of the forces of General Long had been defeated and scattered by Colonel Perez.

Captain Randall Jones and his brother James returned to Texas as colonists of Austin, and on the way rescued Mrs. Long at Bolivar Point, as has been stated elsewhere, and conveyed her to San Antonio, and then returned to the colony and settled in Fort Bend County. In 1823 Randall Jones returned to Louisiana and traded negroes for sixty head of cattle, and conveyed them without loss to his new home on the Brazos. This was the first large shipment of stock brought to Fort Bend County. Before this the Mortons had conveyed some milch cows to the colony.

Captain Jones was a very active man in Austin's colony, and in 1824, when the Craunkaway Indians began to attack some of the colonists lower down the country, in what is now Brazoria County, General Austin sent Captain Jones down there in September with twenty-three men, to chastise them. Of this force of colonists was the husband of Nancy Spencer. The captain dropped down the river in canoes from Fort Bend, and sent out scouts to locate the Indians. Two of the scouts were ordered to proceed to Bailey's store, where it was reported that a dozen Indians had gone to capture the place and get ammunition, or, as some say, to purchase the ammunition, but this is hardly likely, under the circumstances. When the scouts arrived at the store they found a number of

the colonists assembled, more or less excited on account of the recent conduct of the Indians in making an attack upon some of the settlers. The Indians came to the store, but were attacked by the whites, a few of them killed, and the balance driven off. The scouts of Captain Jones and some of the men at the store, one of the Baileys being of the number, then hastily went in search of the Captain and informed him of the situation, and he learning from other scouts that the Indians were encamped about seven miles distant, on the west bank of a sluggish stream since called Jones Creek, he made a night march and attacked them at daylight. These Indians were powerful, athletic fellows, very dexterous and accurate with the bow, each warrior carrying one his own length and placing one end of the bow on the ground when shooting. They were hid in the tall marsh grass when Captain Jones and his men made the attack, and having greatly superior numbers, boldly met the charge, and after a desperate fight of only a few minutes' duration the settlers were forced to retreat, after having emptied their guns and pistols. The Indians lost fifteen warriors and Captain Jones had three of his men killed—Spencer, Bailey and Singer—and three wounded. The Captain also had a narrow escape, having an arrow shot through his cap, which knocked it from his head. The Indians, however, left this part of the country after the fight, and went over on the Colorado and killed some settlers there, but were finally defeated by Captain Jesse Burnham, in which fight they lost nine, and later in another battle they lost twenty warriors, and they ceased to molest the settlers on the Brazos and Colorado.

On the 12th of October, 1824 Captain Jones married Miss Polly Andrews, and their first child was named Wiley Martin.

In 1835, when hostilities commenced with Mexico, a

consultation was held at San Felipe, composed of members from the different districts, to consult as to ways and means to meet the emergency, and the members from Fort Bend were Wiley Martin, Thomas Barnett and Randall Jones.

The Randall Jones league of land is on Jones' Creek, on the east side of the Brazos River, two miles above Richmond. His labor was located on the west side of the river, in the bend, where he settled, and where Deaf Smith drew his last breath, in 1837.

Captain Randall Jones had nine children. The eldest, Wiley Martin, went to California in 1849, and died there. James Austin married Allie Vasney; Martha married Robert Beale; Eliza M. married Hon. Gustav Cook; Miss Pamela Ann never married, and lives in Houston with her sister, Mrs. Sallie Chambers Bruckmuller. Sudie E. married A. B. Ernest, who was killed at the battle of Shiloh. Sam Houston died in the infirmary at Houston. During the civil war he belonged to the 8th Texas Terry Rangers, and was in prison at Fort Delaware nineteen months. James Miller married Fanny Haley; she died, and his second wife was Miss M. L. Mosley, a native of Alabama, but reared in Richmond. James M., now 58 years of age, lives in Richmond.

Captain Jones lived to a good old age, and died in Houston in 1873, at the house of his son-in-law, Hon. Gustav Cook. Several years before his death he was entirely blind.

Colonel Gustav Cook was a native of Alabama, born in Talladega County, and came to Texas about 1853. In the civil war he was Lieutenant Colonel of the famous "Terry Rangers," going from Fort Bend County as orderly sergeant of Company H, Captain John T. Holt. He was gradually promoted, as the officers were thinned out after the desperate battles in which the Rangers were engaged,

and finally commanded the regiment. Colonel Terry was killed in the first battle the Rangers participated in after they arrived at the front.

A son of Colonel Cook, Gustav Cook, Jr., is now District Clerk of Hays County, his home being at San Marcos.

CHAPTER XII.

DEAF SMITH.

Erastus Smith, better known as "Deaf Smith," was the son of Chiliab and Mary Smith, and was born in New York on the 19th of April, 1787. At the age of eleven years he emigrated with his parents to the Mississippi Territory, and settled near Natchez. His parents were strict members of the Baptist Church, and gave him such moral and intellectual training as the circumstances around them would permit. He first came to Texas in 1817—likely with some of the patriot forces that were constantly arriving at that time in the Province. He soon, however, returned home; but in 1821 he came again to Texas, for the purpose of making it his home. This he did, never leaving it. He was in the country before Stephen F. Austin, but in what section is not known. His nature was to ramble alone and be by himself. He was not entirely deaf, but unable to hear an ordinary conversation, and if such was going on around him would generally walk away and stand apart, gazing into space. He also had a habit, if anyone addressed him, of putting his finger to his lips, indicating by that, it was supposed, that he was unable to hear the one that addressed him.

When the colony under Green DeWitt commenced settling where the town of Gonzales is now located, Smith was one of them, going there in 1825. From there he drifted out to San Antonio, and in that place formed the acquaintance of a handsome young Mexican widow of the fine Castillian type, named Guadalupe Duran. Her maiden name was Ruiz, her husband, Vincente Duran, only living a short time after their marriage.

She and Deaf Smith were married in San Antonio in 1828, and the record of the marriage is to be found in the old parish church, now San Fernando Cathedral. What occupation Smith followed from that time until 1835 we do not know, except that at times he went on long hunts for buffalo and to explore new localities. He came to Texas in very feeble health, but his constitution was soon built up again from the effect of good climate and active exercise in these long hunts and rambles, eating wild meat and camping out in the pure air of the western prairies. He was a man of limited and plain education, spoke the Spanish language well, and was a close observer of men and things, and thoroughly acquainted with the manners and customs of the Mexicans and the geography of Texas and the frontier.

In 1835, when the war between Mexico and her American colonies began, commencing with the fight at Gonzales over the little cannon, General Stephen F. Austin raised a force and marched upon San Antonio, then garrisoned by Mexican troops under General Prefecto Cos. The Texans encamped on the Sallado Creek, four miles east of San Antonio, and while there Deaf Smith and a man named Arnold (who was his brother-in-law) came to Austin's camp on their way to San Antonio. They had been gone for several weeks in the Little River country north of where the city of Austin now is, hunting buffalo, and Smith had not seen his wife and children for some time. He told General Austin who he was and that his wife was a Mexican woman, and she and his children were in the town now commanded by General Cos, that he had heard of the war just commencing, but did not wish to take sides in the fight between the colonists and the military. He then asked permission of Austin to pass his pickets (who were in the prairie west of the creek toward the town), so that he could have a talk with the Mexican officers in com-

mand of the enemy's pickets who were beyond the Texans in the edge of the town. Arnold preferred to remain with the Texans, but Smith was furnished with a pass and went on his way, getting through Austin's pickets all right, not anticipating any trouble in passing the Mexicans.

Next day Mr. Smith came back to General Austin's tent without his hat, and he himself considerably excited, and said: "General, I told you yesterday that I would not take sides in this war, but I now tender you my services, as the Mexicans acted rascally with me. The officer I talked with yesterday said I would have to consult General Cos as to whether or not I would be allowed to go into San Antonio to see my family, and told me to come tomorrow and he would let me know. When I went awhile ago and was talking to the officer I saw cavalry coming toward me in a gallop, and being satisfied they intended to capture me, I wheeled my horse around and put spurs and whip to him, and finally had to resort to my gun. The officer I was talking to went for me and the cavalry commenced firing at me, and but for the timely arrival of some of the Texans who fired on the Mexicans, I expect I would have been captured."

Some Texan picket guards afterwards stated that the Mexican officer struck Smith over the head with his sabre, knocking his hat off and wounding him so that he bled profusely, and that he fired his rifle and a brace of pistols while the cavalry were pursuing and firing at him. The Texan pickets then came to his assistance and drove the Mexican cavalry back by a volley from their rifles. Two of these pickets who helped to relieve Smith were Wm. Joel Bryan and John W. Hassell, of Captain Eberley's company from Brazoria County.

General Austin very graciously accepted the services of Smith, and called on him to guide his army from the camp

on the Sallado to the Mission de Espada on the San Antonio River below the town of San Antonio, which he willingly proceeded to do, part of the way being through woods without any road. After arriving at the mission a Mexican came into camp and was brought to the General's tent, who was the bearer of a letter from John W. Smith in San Antonio to General Austin, informing him of the force under General Cos and of the fortifications being made, etc. At the request of Deaf Smith, the General wrote to John W. Smith (no relation of Erastus Smith), requesting that he would, on a certain night, have Erastus Smith's wife and children conveyed to a certain place near town and Erastus Smith would be there to meet his wife and children, which was done, and they were brought into camp at the Mission de Espada. Moses Austin Bryan, who was with the army of General Austin, gives these facts about the family of Deaf Smith being brought to the Texan camp, and in a letter says: "I went to see them there and talked to them in the Spanish language, which I had learned in a Mexican family."

Deaf Smith soon became one among the most trusted scouts of the Texan army. He was always on the alert, watching the enemy and bringing information, being ably aided in this by John W. Smith, Henry Karnes, Bird Lockhart, Placido Benavides and Anold. They took part in the battle of Mission Concepcion, and Deaf Smith brought on the "Grass Fight" by reporting to Colonel James Bowie the approach of a body of Mexicans from the west. Finally, when the Texans stormed San Antonio under Milam and Johnson, Deaf Smith led the way as guide and killed a Mexican sentinel at daylight. Later on in the desperate fight at the Veramendi House, where Colonel Milam and others were killed, Deaf Smith was severely wounded, and had to be taken down from the roof of the house, to which he had ascended in order to get a better



THE AUTHOR AS A TEXAS RANGER - 1870.

view of the enemy. The city was taken and the captured army of Cos paroled and sent back to Mexico. Most of the Texan soldiers returned home, only a garrison under Colonel Neill first, and Colonel Travis later, being left at the Alamo. This was in the fall of 1835, but in the following February Santa Anna, President of Mexico, arrived with a large invading army and commenced the siege of the Alamo.

As soon as Deaf Smith had to some extent recovered from his wound he conveyed his family to Columbia on the Brazos, and, hearing of the invasion of Santa Anna, hurried away and joined General Houston, who was marching with a small force, to the aid of Travis, whose appeals for help had reached the east and fired every patriotic heart. At Gonzales Houston sent Deaf Smith and Henry Karnes to see if anything could be learned as to the fate of Travis and his men at the Alamo. Fifteen miles west from Gonzales they met Mrs. Dickinson, wife of Lieutenant Almon Dickinson, who had escaped from the Alamo with her child and a negro boy belonging to Colonel Travis. She told the sad tale of the fall of the Alamo and the death of all of its gallant defenders. She was conveyed to General Houston, who, after hearing her report, ordered all the people of DeWitt's colony in and around Gonzales to retreat toward the Sabine. Messengers were also sent to settlements further east with the news of the coming of Santa Anna, and the famous "Runaway Scrape" commenced, the little army of Houston then numbering about 300, going with the fleeing settlers. The Mexican army came east in three divisions, Santa Anna leading the first and following after General Houston. Deaf Smith and other scouts kept in the rear, closely watching the Mexican army and fighting and capturing their scouts at every opportunity.

When the Texas army had retreated to San Felipe

on the Brazos and went into camp there, Deaf Smith, Henry Karnes, Wash Secrest and McManny had a fight with the Mexican scouts on Rock Creek, west of the Colorado, in which they killed two and captured several and brought them to camp. Moses Austin Bryan, nephew of Stephen F. Austin, was then sergeant of the camp guard and was at the guard line when the Mexican captives were brought in and General Houston sent for him to question them. They failed to give out much information, but said they were Sesma's men and that officer was leading the advance of the first division, but did not state that Santa Anna was present with the army.

On or about the 30th of March, Deaf Smith and John York were sent back to the Colorado to spy the movements of the Mexicans, and came to the camp of Captain Mosley Baker on the east bank of the river at San Felipe, and reported the Mexican army on the Benard, twelve miles from San Felipe, which caused Captain Baker, some say, to order the burning of the town, which, he said, was General Houston's order in case the Mexicans came that way. Houston and the main body of the army had gone on up to "Groce's Retreat" and went into camp there. It was a mistake, however, about the Mexicans being on the Benard, as they did not come in sight of San Felipe for three days after the burning of the town. It was supposed that Smith and York had seen stock watering at Benard crossing and mistook them for an army. Their horses were almost broken down from constant scouting and they dared not venture very near the supposed army on the prairie, and they had no field glasses. This was the first time that Deaf Smith ever brought in a false report and he was greatly mortified over it, as was also John York. When the Mexicans did come Captain Baker and his men fought them so fiercely they failed to effect a passage of

the river there, and consequently came on down the river and crossed at Fort Bend.

On the 18th of April, 1836, after General Houston had taken up the line of march from his camp, Deaf Smith, Henry Karnes, Wash Secrest and Pierce were sent on in advance of the army and crossed Buffalo Bayou at Harrisburg, and about twelve miles out on the road to the Brazos they met and captured three Mexicans, one a captain in the army, going to join Santa Anna, who had been at Harrisburg on the 16th and marched from there to New Washington, hoping to capture President Burnett and his cabinet, who had just left Harrisburg for Galveston in time to escape being taken prisoners. Another one of the captured Mexicans was a courier with dispatches from the secretary of war and General Filasola on the Brazos at Thompson's Ferry. The third one was a Mexican who belonged to Captain Juan N. Seguin's company in the Texas army. Capt. Seguin had secured a furlough for this man when General Houston retreated from Gonzales to go to San Antonio and provide for his family. General Sesma had found him and was using him for a guide. When the Mexicans were captured Deaf Smith exchanged suits with the courier, and when the party arrived at the camp of the Texans Houston sent for Moses Austin Bryan to question them, and he thus describes the scene:

"The ludicrous appearance of Deaf Smith, and the still more laughable appearance of the Mexican courier, caused general laughter and hurrah. Smith had on the Mexican courier's fine suit of leather, all braided and fixed up uniform style, a broad-brim sombrero headband and trinkets attached and fine shoes and socks, but the suit was too small and too tight for Smith, the pants not reaching nearer than six inches of the top of his shoes. The Mexican courier had on Deaf Smith's old ragged coat and ragged pants, too big and too long for him, and old brogans with

his toes sticking out of the holes in them. The men and officers came in squads to see Deaf Smith in his new suit and to sympathize with the forlorn-looking courier, who looked as though he would like for the earth to open and swallow him up."

Mr. Bryan questioned the Mexican who belonged to Seguin's company for General Houston, and all the facts were learned about Santa Anna and the forces under his command who had passed down two days before, hoping to catch President Burnett and his cabinet and then make their way to Anahuac, where he expected to embark for Vera Cruz and leave Texas to be garrisoned by his second in command, General Filasola.

For the first time now General Houston knew for certain that Santa Anna was in person with the army and what his plans were. He now crossed Buffalo Bayou two miles below Harrisburg and rapidly followed Santa Anna, getting between him and Cos and Filasola, crossed Vince's bridge close upon the rear of the enemy, and, turning down Vince's Bayou, went into camp on Buffalo Bayou, near its confluence with the San Jacinto River. The Mexican scouts discovered the Texans and reported to Santa Anna, who was at New Washington, and he turned back with his army and went into camp facing them on the 20th of April. Some skirmishing was indulged in that evening, and that night Cos crossed Vince's bridge with 500 men and joined Santa Anna.

On the morning of the 21st, the day of battle, General Houston sent for Deaf Smith and one other man (supposed to be Moses Lapham), and instructed Smith that he and his companion take axes and cut Vince's bridge down to prevent any more reinforcements from reaching Santa Anna, and also to prevent the escape of the Mexican army in case they were defeated. Smith had already reported to the General that the 500 under Cos had crossed and

that he now thought Santa Anna's forces were near 2,000. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon the Texans moved out from their camp to attack the Mexican army, and as they were advancing Deaf Smith and his companions came galloping across the prairie to join them, Smith waving an axe and shouting at the top of his voice that Vince's bridge was down. He fell in with the cavalry under Lamar and Karnes, and was one of the central figures in that short, but desperate fight with the cavalry of Santa Anna. Besides his gun, Smith had two large, heavy pistols, and, after firing these, hurled them at the heads of his enemies. He also carried a short sabre, which he broke off at the hilt. Captain Karnes, with a small portion of the cavalry, pursued some of the fugitives to the destroyed bridge, where, they not being able to cross, milled like a bunch of cattle and many were killed, but some of the most important ones, of whom was Santa Anna and Cos, for the time made their escape. During the night Karnes, Deaf Smith and others guarded a thicket, in which four Mexican officers had taken refuge after abandoning their horses, not being able to cross the boggy bayou. They went into this thicket at twilight, but when daylight came only one remained. He surrendered and proved to be Santa Anna's secretary, and stated that the other three were Santa Anna, Cos and another officer. Captain Henry Karnes now, with Deaf Smith, Wash Secrest, Fielding Secrest and James Wells, went in pursuit of the fugitives, passing around the head of Vince's Bayou toward the Brazos River. Wells being the best mounted kept in the lead and came upon General Cos, Captain Iberri, Captain Bachiler and two or three others near the Brazos timber, where the fugitives seeing Karnes and the others rapidly approaching, halted and surrendered. Cos, whose identify at that time was not known, inquired of Deaf Smith if General Cos had been killed or captured; Smith replied: "He has neither been

killed or captured. I am hunting for him now, for he is one scoundrel I wish to kill in person." Having fairly surrendered, however, Cos was safe even in the hands of Deaf Smith. They did not reach the Texan camp with their prisoners and others they picked up until the 23rd.

Santa Anna had separated from the others that night in the thicket, and went off alone. On the 22nd, mounted men in small squads scoured the country on the route towards the Brazos, picking up many straggling Mexicans. A party under Col. Ed. Burleson reached and crossed the bayou above the burned bridge, accidentally finding a place where the passage could be made, and soon after directed some of his men to return to camp and search down the east side of the bayou, saying he would continue up the bayou on the west. A group of six cavalrymen—composed of Second Sergeant James A. Sylvester, Joel W. Robinson, Edward Miles, Joseph Vermillion and Thompson and others started back, traveling somewhat parallel to and down the bayou. Five of the party followed a bend of the stream while Sylvester went directly across about a mile to the lower part of the bend. Before separating the entire party had noticed a man on foot in the locality, but before Sylvester arrived he had disappeared. On reaching the spot, however, he found the man lying down and trying to conceal himself in the high grass. Before this Sylvester had been attracted to the spot by the actions of some deer which had detected the presence of the man in the grass, and were trying to satisfy their curiosity by circling around the spot and looking. Sylvester ordered the man to arise, and was soon joined by the other party. This was Santa Anna, but he had thrown off his uniform and put on that of a common soldier, which was a blue jacket, glazed cap, and white pants. He had, however, retained his fine shirt with gold studs in the bosom and his sharp pointed shoes, which was commented on by his cap-

tors at the time, but they had no idea their prisoner was the Mexican President until they arrived at camp.

General Houston dictated terms to Santa Anna, and made him sign an order to Filasola, his second in command, to evacuate Texas at once with all the Mexican troops, and this order was intrusted to Deaf Smith to deliver into the hands of the Mexican general. Filasola, however, had learned of the defeat of Santa Anna from a wounded soldier of the Tampico regiment, who came to him at Fort Bend with his horse and himself covered with blood and mud. Filasola asked him where Santa Anna and the army was. "Todas vamosed per el diablo," he said ("All gone to the devil"). This caused a panic in camp, and before the order which Deaf Smith bore reached Filasola he had caused Gaona's division to recross the Brazos and commence a hasty retreat. At Mrs. Powell's farm, fifteen miles from Fort Bend, he had concentrated his troops, including Urrea's division, making his force at that time more than four thousand men, and this only four days after the battle. A council of the generals was held, and it was agreed to retreat beyond the Colorado, open communications with the capital, and await advice and assistance. The retreat was very disorderly, the road being strewn with carts, muskets and other effects in such quantities as to impede the progress of the enemy. On the 28th, before they reached the Colorado, Deaf Smith overtook them, bearing Santa Anna's order of the 22nd. Gradually now the different divisions of the Mexican army withdrew from Texas. On the return of Deaf Smith he hunted up the people who were in hiding in the dense canebrakes of the Brazos bottom in Fort Bend County, and told them that they could return to their homes in safety.

The end of Deaf Smith was near, and but little more of his eventful life remains to be told. He carried his family back to San Antonio, and in 1837 was made captain

of a company of rangers to scout along the Texas and Mexican border. He left San Antonio with his men on the 6th day of March (just one year from the storming of the Alamo), and on the 16th was camped on the Chicon, a small stream within five miles of the town of Laredo. Here he was discovered by the scouts of the Mexicans, who still made a pretense of holding the country west of the Nueces River. Captain Smith also discovering the enemy, and anticipating an attack, took up a position in a mesquite thicket, and awaited developments. A company of Mexican cavalry twice their number advanced to attack the Texans, but after a sharp fight in which they suffered a loss of ten killed and as many wounded the Mexicans retreated to Laredo. Only two of Smith's men were wounded. In the fall of this same year, after his men were disbanded, Deaf Smith left his family in San Antonio and came to Richmond, Fort Bend County, and in company with John P. Borden established a land agency. Soon after, however, a fatal sickness attacked him, and he died November the 30th, 1837, at the home of Captain Randall Jones, about one mile north of the present business center of Richmond. John R. Fenn, then a boy, was in town, and remembers seeing the funeral procession pass through the then small village, about twenty men being in the party.

The *Houston Telegraph*, draped in mourning and announcing his death, said: "This singular individual was one whose name bears with it more respect than sounding titles. Major, Colonel, General, sink into insignificance before the simple name of '*Deaf Smith*.' That name is identified with the battlefields of Texas. His eulogy is inseparably interwoven with the most thrilling annals of our country, and will long yield to our traditionary narratives a peculiar interest."

In the *Matagorda Bulletin* of December the 13th, 1837,

there is a report of a public meeting held in Richmond, Fort Bend County, to do honor to Erastus Smith and give a public funeral. R. E. Handy was chairman, John V. Morton secretary, and a committee consisting of John V. Morton, D. L. Smithers, Maj. C. C. Sebring, John Shipman and I. L. Bryan were appointed to carry out the wishes of the meeting.

The exact spot where the remains of Deaf Smith rest is now lost. Thomas J. Smith (no relation), helped to bury him, and many years after located the spot as near as he could in the southeast corner of the yard fence enclosing the Episcopal Church house. Here a rock was set up by the "Daughters of the Republic," with name and date of death of the famous spy and scout, but was subsequently removed and placed in the Richmond cemetery beside the grave and monument of General Lamar.

Mrs. Mary Polly Ryon, one of the earliest born settlers of Fort Bend County, and wife of a Mier prisoner—Colonel William Ryon—was present when Deaf Smith died and buried. She survived until ten or twelve years ago. Her recollection of the spot was about the same as that of Thomas J. Smith. Mrs. V. M. Ryon, who still lives at Richmond, says that when she was a little girl, going to school, their route lay by a sunken, grass-grown place in the ground, and were told that was the grave of Deaf Smith. This was about 1853. She says a little tree grew near it, and her idea is that the grave was where two streets now cross near the Episcopal Church. Thomas J. Smith made several excavations searching for the remains, but was unable to find them. The wife of Deaf Smith survived her distinguished husband nearly twelve years, dying in San Antonio May the 1st, 1849.

The children of Deaf Smith and his wife, Guadalupe Smith, were two, a boy and girl—Trinidad Travis Smith and Simonia Smith. The latter married I. N. Smith of

San Antonio, and many of their children survive and live there. Trinidad Travis was educated by R. A. Martin, of Baldwin, Mississippi.

Erastus Smith had fine property at Grand Gulf, Miss., but he did not attend to it.

Mrs. Roach, of the American House, of San Antonio, is the recognized grand-daughter of Deaf Smith and sister of Miss Palma Fisk and Cornelia Fisk, the latter being many years a public school teacher and daughter of J. N. Fisk, once Justice of the Peace. The family is an honorable one, and they are honorably connected by marriage. The State of Texas recognized Guadalupe Smith (formerly Duran, nee Ruiz), and the children, and they inherited the lands made to Erastus Smith.

Deaf Smith died from a broken down constitution caused from incessant toil in the rain, mud and water during the invasion of Santa Anna.

CHAPTER XIII.

SANTA ANNA'S ARMY IN FORT BEND COUNTY, 1836.

After the fall of the Alamo on the 6th day of March, 1836, Santa Anna, President of Mexico, marched to the conquest of the balance of Texas with four divisions of his army. The first, commanded by himself in person, and the second by Filasola, followed the small retreating army of General Houston and the fleeing settlers. Colonel Urrea was sent with another division to attack Colonel Fannin at Goliad, while Gaona, with the fourth, went by way of Bastrop to destroy the little town and settlement there. Among the regimental commanders were Almonte, Sesma, Castrillon and others. Colonel Almonte, who figured so conspicuously in this invasion, was with the division of Santa Anna.

On the 26th of March, 1836, Santa Anna ordered Colonel Urrea with his force of nearly 2,000 men to scour all the country from Victoria to Galveston, and under his most strict responsibility he should fulfill the orders of the government to shoot all prisoners, and to commence with those under Colonel J. W. Fannin, who had been taken captive but a few days before. The same instructions were given to Sesma and Gaona to execute all those found with arms in their hands, and to force those who had not taken up arms to leave the country.

The town of Gonzales in DeWitt's Colony on the Guadalupe was laid in ashes by the Texans when they abandoned it, and nothing but smoking ruins confronted Santa Anna when he approached it. Houston was retreating to-

wards the Colorado, and the settlers were fleeing from the various settlements towards the Sabine River.

Between the 17th and 20th, after having crossed the Colorado, General Houston moved down that stream on the east side from Burnham's to Beason's, the latter being a few miles below the present town of Columbus, in Colorado County. Sesma was in command of the advance of Santa Anna's division, and on the 20th was on the Navadad River, thirty miles west of the Colorado. He reported to Santa Anna on the 15th that he was on the Colorado River, but was in fact on Rocky Creek, a tributary of the Navadad, twenty miles west of the Colorado. On March the 20th Houston's scouts, under Captain Henry W. Karnes, defeated the scouts of Sesma on Rocky Creek, killing one and capturing another. On the 23rd Sesma camped three miles from the Colorado.

Satisfied that Santa Anna's main army would follow the advance under Sesma, General Houston fell back to the Brazos and encamped on Mill Creek, above San Felipe. The news had now been received of the massacre of Fannin's men, and when it was also learned that the Mexican army was on the east side of the Colorado, the people of San Felipe burned the town, and a general retreat commenced from that place, the settlers endeavoring to put the Sabine River between them and the Mexican army until the final battle for Texas independence came off. It was during these trying and exciting times that those famous scouts, Deaf Smith, Henry Karnes and Wash Secrest, performed service that won them a bright page in Texas history.

On the 12th and 13th General Houston, with the aid of the steamboat "Yellowstone," commanded by Captain Ross, and nearly loaded with cotton at Groce's Ferry, and a smaller craft, crossed from the west to the east side of the Brazos, which was very high and difficult of passage

and pitched camp at "Groce's Retreat," near the present town of Hempstead. In the meantime he had ordered Captain Wiley Martin to occupy a position with a small force at Fort Bend, and Captain Moseley Baker, with a like force opposite San Felipe, to dispute the passage there with Santa Anna, and cripple and delay him as much as possible. Here Baker's men from the east bank fought the first advance of the Mexican army, and so destructive was their rifle fire that the Mexicans recoiled, and, not knowing the strength of the Texans across the river, abandoned the idea of any further attempt to force a passage there, and moved thirty miles below to Fort Bend, now Richmond. It was impossible for General Houston to guard all the river passes for 100 miles, and at the same time concentrate his force so as to guard any one point effectually. An invading army marches with everything necessary to conquest.

Colonel Almonte in his diary in substance says that on the 9th Santa Anna took the choice companies of Guerrero, Matamoros, Mexico and Toluca and fifty of the Tampico cavalry and moved down the country in search of a crossing over the river, following the road leading to and down the San Benard. On the 10th, at a farm on the Fort Bend and Egypt crossing of the Benard, they found twenty barrels of sugar and 1,250 bushels of corn. Here they learned that a force was awaiting to oppose them at Fort Bend on the old Fort Bend road, and then they marched toward that place. (This force was Captain Martin's men.) At half past 9 o'clock p. m. they halted, but at 2 a. m. renewed the march on foot—from the president (Santa Anna) down to the soldiers, leaving the baggage and cavalry for the purpose of surprising the enemy, who defended the crossing, before daylight. They did not succeed, as the distance was double what they supposed it was. Day broke on them

a quarter of a league from the ferry, and frustrated their plans. The men were then placed in ambush.

On the 11th they were still in ambush, when a passing negro from the east side was captured. He conducted them to the canoe in which he crossed, a little below the ferry, in which, unperceived, they crossed. By this time the cavalry arrived and took possession of the houses. In John Henry Brown's history of Texas he says: "Captain Martin had previously crossed to the east side and kept up a fire at the Mexicans till the Cazadores, under Bringus, crossed at the lower ford and were about to assail him in the rear. He then retired."

Almonte does not mention any fight with Martin's men, or the capture of John R. Fenn and Joe Kuykendall, or the passage of the "Yellow Stone" down the river at the time. He further says that "An order was at once sent to Sesma to join them here, and a letter written by Santa Anna to Urrea at Matagorda." The boats were then repaired, and they took possession of Thompson's Ferry, a little above. On the 13th Ramirez with a force arrived from Victoria. Many articles were found, and dispatches arrived both from Filasola and Urrea.

"On the 14th," says Almonte, quoting his exact words, "We crossed the river early with our beds only, and provisions for the road. At 3 in the afternoon we started from Thompson's Ferry and arrived at Harrisburg on the 15th."

Within a day or two after Santa Anna left Fort Bend Filasola arrived with his division, and was here joined by Gaona, who, having burned Bastrop, marched down the Colorado, and, intercepting the trail of the other divisions, followed them.

During this time the gallant little army of Houston were crossing the northwestern part of Fort Bend County, in the direction of the head of Buffalo Bayou.

CHAPTER XIV.

JOHN R. FENN.

John R. Fenn, one of the old settlers of Fort Bend County, was born in Lawrence County, Mississippi, on the 11th day of October, 1824. His father, Eli Fenn, was from Savannah, Georgia, as was also his mother, who was Miss Sarah Fitzgerald, daughter of David Fitzgerald. Eli Fenn was a particular friend of General Andrew Jackson, of Tennessee, and served under him in the campaign against the Creek Indians in 1812, participating during that time in the famous battle of the "Horseshoe," fought in the bend of Tallapoosa River, in Alabama.

David Fitzgerald came to Texas in 1822, and several years passed away before any tidings reached his people of his location, so in 1832 Eli Fenn left his family in Madison County, Mississippi, and came to Texas in search of him. In Austin's Colony, in what is now Fort Bend County, John Fitzgerald (son of David Fitzgerald) was found, the latter having died three months before the arrival of Mr. Fenn. The Fitzgerald place was three miles below the present town of Richmond, on the east bank of the Brazos River. David Fitzgerald came to this place in a canoe in 1822, bringing his son John and two African negroes, a man and a woman.

At this point a small band of Indians had a cluster of wigwams, but the savages fled at the sight of Mr. Fitzgerald and his party, and they landed and took possession. Here they stayed for some time, expecting the Indians to come back, but as they failed to do so Fitzgerald concluded to locate his league of land there and stay. For this purpose he journeyed on up the river to San Felipe, and had an

interview with Stephen F. Austin, the empresario, but learned that this land had already been taken up and was on the grant of William Morton. Austin, however, told him to remain if he wished, and he would get Mr. Morton to make an exchange with him when he, Fitzgerald, should locate his headright. This being satisfactory, he took out the necessary papers, and in company with the surveyor and chain carriers located the Fitzgerald grant in the lower edge of Fort Bend County on the east bank of the Brazos River, at a place then known as "Long Reach," about nineteen miles below the present town of Richmond. One quarter of a league of this land was exchanged with William Morton, the amount taken up on his grant three miles below Fort Bend. Louisa Morton, who married Daniel Perry, inherited the quarter league thus exchanged. In order to hold the land at "Long Reach," a clearing had to be made and some crop planted, so Mr. Fitzgerald left a negro man there, and a German, named John McCloskey, to make the clearing and plant some corn. When the corn, however, began to mature, the bears were so numerous that they came near eating the crop up, and Fitzgerald furnished his men with a gun and a pound or two of ammunition, with which to make war on the bears, and save the balance of the crop. They, however, were bad marksmen, and shot away all of the ammunition and only killed one bear, and this was the plan they worked to get him: In felling the trees to make the clearing, a large one had fallen in such a manner that one end of it was inside of the field and the other end on the outside. At this particular place an old bear was in the habit of coming into the corn by walking this log. The old negro man heavily charged the gun, and taking his position at the end of the log, on the inside of the field, pointed the gun along the log, and waited patiently for the bear. He finally came, and, mounting the

log, came walking straight toward the muzzle of the gun, and a terrific explosion was heard, almost loud enough to make every wild animal in the Brazos bottom for miles around start from his lair and pull his freight. When the smoke cleared away a dead bear was seen beside the log and a negro getting up a few yards from the end of it, badly shaken up, but jubilant, for he had the bear. On another occasion they found a panther up a tree, and the negro stood off a distance and fired at him. The panther was not touched, but came down and went up another tree. The negro loaded up and fired again, with the same result, not hurt, but came down, and went up another tree. This was repeated about four times, and then the colored marksman stood at the root of the tree and fired straight up. This time from some accidental cause, the panther was killed and fell heavily to the ground. The negro looked at him a moment, and then, turning to his companion John, said: "I have des now found out how to kill pant'ers: stand under de tree and shoot up at 'em."

Eli Fenn, being well pleased with the country, and wishing to settle here, went back for his family, and came again, arriving at "Hodge's Lake," seven miles east of Richmond, on the prairie, where Walker's Station is now, on the Southern Pacific Railroad, on the 7th day of June, 1833. "Hodge Lake" and "Hodge Bend" were named for Archie, Aleck, and John Hodge, who came at an early date and settled there, the league being granted to Archie Hodge. Other early settlers were the Harris family, who came about the same time as the Hodges, and Miles M. Battle, who came after Fenn and bought 200 acres of land, where the lake is. He likely bought it from Peavyhouse, another early settler, and the Hodges may have sold it to the latter, but the lake was afterwards called "Battle's Lake." Battle also had a grant of his own, and was county clerk of Fort Bend County in 1842. Some of the Hodges

moved at an early day to Gonzales County, and bought a large tract of land in the forks of the San Marcos and Guadalupe Rivers, above the town of Gonzales, and many of their descendants reside there now.

From the prairie at Hodge's Lake in 1833 Eli Fenn cut a road through the Brazos bottom to the Fitzgerald place, on the river, three miles below Richmond, a distance of eight miles by the road, and the first one cut through the Brazos bottom in Fort Bend County. This road was traveled three years afterwards by some of the fleeing settlers in their efforts to get away from Santa Anna's army.

Eli Fenn first settled on the Fitzgerald place—the quarter league exchanged with Morton—and commenced farming there. At this time there was no more land subject to entry in Fort Bend County, and Mr. Fenn had his located in Grimes County, the work of surveying and locating being done for him by Thomas Barnett.

An explanation of the manner of preparing the land and planting corn by these primitive Brazos farmers would be of interest, no doubt, to the younger generation of to-day, who have all of the modern improved agricultural implements at their disposal. In the first year the bottoms were covered with cane, and this was cut down with heavy knife or hatchet, and allowed to remain there until dry, and then burned. When the proper time came for planting, holes were made in the ground with hand spikes, the corn dropped and covered with the foot. It came up all right and grew well, making from forty to sixty bushels of corn to the acre. All the land in the bottom was rich, mellow alluvial soil, and these first crops needed no cultivation except to knock down the young cane with sticks whenever it reached a growth sufficient to injure the corn. Prior to this time no other vegetation had grown on these lands except the cane, but in a few years, after the rank growth of the cane had been stunted weeds and burrs came

and then plows had to be imported, and a regular system of cultivation commenced.

During the early settlement of the country a tribe of Coast Indians called Craunkaways made a raid on some of the colonists below, killed some of the people and carried off a little girl captive.

After proceeding some distance they camped, killed the child, and proceeded to eat her, first splitting open the body, then quartering it, and placing the parts on sharp sticks and cooking them. They had just commenced this cannibal feast when a band of settlers, among whom was David Fitzgerald, dashed upon them, having been on their trail. The Indians were so completely absorbed in their diabolical and hellish orgie as to be oblivious to their surroundings, and were taken by surprise. In the fight which ensued all were killed except a squaw and her two small children. She fled with these for a long distance, and finally came to the house of Jack Randon, a short distance below the present site of Richmond. The Indian woman made signs to Mrs. Randon, her husband not being at home, that she wanted something to eat, and she told her negro cook, Mima, to supply them. After they had eaten, the squaw took her children a short distance, and sat down under a tree. Soon several white men came to the house, and Mrs. Randon told them about the squaw. They consulted a little while, and then decided it was best to exterminate such a race, and, proceeding to where they were, killed all three of them. John R. Fenn says the bones of these unfortunates were still to be seen scattered around the tree when he first came to the country in 1833.

In 1834 and 1835 Eli Fenn made good crops of cotton and corn, and planted a crop in 1836, but lost that one on account of the Mexican invasion of that year. When the news came of the advance of Santa Anna Mr. Fenn joined the company of Captain Wiley Martin, who was

ordered by General Houston to raise a force and defend the ferry at Thompson's, in the bend two miles above Richmond. Now the boat which was used at the ferry was made by Eli Fenn, and belonged to him, he having constructed it for the purpose of transporting cotton down the Brazos to Columbia, distant about seventy miles by the river. The lumber from which this boat was made was cut by a whip-saw, the logs being raised on scaffolding, and the saw working up and down, one man being on top of the log and the other underneath. The capacity of the boat was about twelve bales of cotton. A short time before the outbreak of the Texas Revolution Mr. Fenn had made a trip to Columbia, and brought back a boat-load of supplies and stored them in his house. He then carried the boat up to Thompson's and either loaned or hired it to him to use as a ferry boat, Mr. Fenn having no more use for it until the next cotton season. Another small boat was kept at William Morton's, opposite Richmond, for the use of the people in crossing to and fro, who lived on both sides of the river. This boat had been ordered sunk by Captain Martin when he received news of the approach of the Mexicans, but it had not been done, and which fact caused trouble later on, as we shall see. This was about the status of things at the Bend when the advance of Santa Anna's army arrived there. Eli Fenn left the ferry, and, hurrying home, informed his family of the facts, and told them to get away from there and go up to Morton's. He then went back to his command. Mrs. Fenn at once went to work filling sacks with provisions and some clothing, and packing them on ponies, and taking four negroes and her family, then consisting of two boys, John and Jesse, the latter being about five years of age and the other twelve, proceeded to Morton's. Here she found several other women and their children, whose husbands were also in Captain Martin's company at the ferry. They

were in charge of Joe Kuykendall, who was a cripple. The people present there were Joe Kuykendall and his wife, Mrs. Gil Kuykendall, Mrs. Abe Kuykendall, Mrs. Fenn and family, Mrs. James, Miss Jane Kuykendall, and five or six negroes. At this time the advance of the Mexican army under the command of Colonel Almonte was coming across the prairie from the west in order to surprise Captain Martin and his men in the night, but daylight coming upon them before they reached that point, Almonte ambushed his men in the high grass about one mile from the river. Now in the early morning, while the people at Morton's were eating breakfast by candle light, a difficulty occurred in the kitchen between a negro belonging to John Morton, named Cain, and another, named John, whom David Fitzgerald brought to Texas. During the controversy Cain hit John over the head with a gun, and the latter, leaving the kitchen, informed Kuykendall, who was in command there, of the assault made upon him by Cain. The offending party had followed John with the gun still in hand, and was standing near, listening to the accusation, which, when recited, so enraged Kuykendall that he wrenched the gun from Cain's hands and struck him over the head with it. Old Cain now left the place, saying he was going up to the ferry and tell Marse John (Morton). He went down to the river and secured the small boat before mentioned, and crossing to the west side of the river, tied it up, and started across the bend toward the ferry. In this journey he came upon the ambushed men of Almonte, and the latter raised up and accosted him in English thus: "Good morning, Uncle." Cain recognised him as a Mexican, and seeing no others, replied very loftily: "I got no good mawnin' fer ye, sah," and proceeded on his way. Again Almonte accosted him: "Hold on, I want to talk with you." "I got no talk fer ye, sah," was the reply, as he moved on. Almonte now

whistled, and about a dozen soldiers arose from the grass and presented their muskets at him. This brought Cain to terms and to his knees, with his hands up, and he said he would surrender. He was now taken into custody and made to conduct them to the boat in which he had crossed, and they managed by making several trips to land about fifty soldiers on the east bank of the river before they were discovered by the people at Morton's, only a few hundred yards away. The morning was somewhat foggy and the Mexicans approached the river through the high grass and some cottonwood trees, and effected a crossing just above where the county bridge now spans the Brazos. By the time fifty infantrymen had landed on the east side and were still under the bank or bluff of the river the Mexican cavalry arrived and lined the west bank, where was also several hundred more infantry. It was about this time that they were discovered by Joe Kuykendall and he, thinking it was General Houston's army from San Felipe, said to the women who had assembled around him, "Come, ladies, yonder is Houston's army fixing to cross the river. Let's go and look at them." This was joyful news to the distressed people, and they hurried to the river bank just as the Mexicans who had crossed were coming up it close upon them. Kuykendall saw at once his mistake, and, starting back, said: "Ladies, d——d if it ain't the Mexicans." All now turned and fled in wild terror back toward the house, and the Mexican's commenced firing at them. Kuykendall, being lame, soon stopped and surrendered, but the women kept on, partly obscured from view by the fog and smoke from the guns, and succeeded in reaching the house without any of them being wounded. Great confusion prevailed, the women only halting long enough, some of them, to secure valuables, and all sped away toward the timbered bottom east a few hundred yards away. Joe Kuykendall's wife, when they reached

the house hastily opened a trunk and secured \$1100—\$400 of which was in silver, tied up in a shot sack. The balance of the money was in New Orleans bank paper. When the timber was reached, the silver, being burdensome, she secreted it in the fork of a fallen tree, and went on with the other fugitives, but told where she had hid the silver money. The paper currency was saved, but on the return of the settlers the bag of silver was gone. Abe Kuykendall had come down from the ferry on the east side to see about his family, and arrived there just as the women reached the house. In her exhausting flight and terror his wife was unable to cross the fence, and he laid his gun down to assist her, but by the time he did so the Mexicans were so close upon them he ran on with her and left his rifle lying on the ground, which was later secured by a Mexican. Eli Fenn, being also uneasy about his family, left the ferry, although ordered not to do so by Captain Martin, and hurried to Morton's, but arrived there just as all the people had scattered away from the house, and, seeing they would cut him off before he could reach his people, stopped for a moment to consider and discovered a Mexican on the yard fence, and hastily bringing his rifle to his shoulder, shot him off and then turned and ran back up the river, pursued and fired at by the Mexicans who had discovered his presence by the report of his rifle. His flight was somewhat impeded from the fact that he had on a long-tailed linen coat, in the pockets of which was several bars of lead which flapped him about the hips as he ran. This episode, no doubt, aided in the escape of the women, by drawing the attention of the Mexicans from them to Fenn. Before he got back to the ferry he met some of Martin's men coming down to see what the firing meant, and learning the fact that the Mexicans were crossing there, hurried back and reported, and Captain Martin perceiving that they would be flanked if he held his

position any longer at the ferry, retired and joined General Houston above.

When the women scattered away from Morton's, some ran down a lane, while others kept inside a small field which had recently been plowed. Of the latter party was Mrs. Gil Kuykendall, who carried a three-weeks-old baby in her arms, and, not being able to make good speed over the broken ground, or to climb the fence with her baby, called to her sister-in-law, Miss Jane Kuykendall, who was in the lane, to take her child and handed it to her through a crack in the fence. The young lady ran on with it and the mother kept on inside and crossed the fence at the end of the little field, and went into the heavy timbered bottom. By this time they were all badly scattered, and the mother never saw her baby again for six weeks. Miss Jane, with the child, and Mrs. Joe Kuykendall, stayed together and made their way on foot through the bottom, eight miles to "Hodges' Bend," following the old road cut through there three years before by Eli Fenn. The baby came near starving, as there was nothing it could eat, but by some means during that long flight, until after the battle of San Jacinto, they kept it alive.

In regard to the situation at the ferry, Captain Martin had sent out three scouts, John Shipman, Gil Kuykendall, (father of the babe above mentioned), and Barksdale, to see where the Mexicans were. Out in the prairie at "Randon's Point" above "Barnett's Point" Shipman stood in his saddle so as to have a better view of the surrounding country, and discovered a large body of Mexican cavalry half a mile away, and, dropping back in the saddle, told what he saw, and all turned swiftly back toward the ferry nine miles away, pursued by the cavalry who had also discovered the Texans, but the latter were well mounted and made their escape. On the receipt of this intelligence, Captain Martin crossed his men to the east bank of the river,

using the little ferry boat before mentioned, and about the break of day on the following morning, while Almonte had his men in ambush, as previously mentioned, a Mexican came for water on the west bank of the river and was fired at by one of Martin's pickets, who at once raised the alarm of "Mexicans." They knew now that the enemy were about to attempt a crossing somewhere, and it was then that Eli Fenn went down to Morton's, preceded a little by Abe Kuykendall as before stated. Now, on the morning of the capture of Joe Kuykendall and the scattering of the women, the former had sent John R. Fenn and a negro boy named Jack, who belonged to Kuykendall, down the river about half a mile to get some horses, but not finding them in the anticipated place, were detained some time hunting for them. When the stock were finally secured, the boys brought them on up to Morton's, but by this time a large body of Mexicans was at the place and they stopped before reaching the house, not being familiar with soldiers and uniforms, and knew not what to do. Young Fenn asked the question, "Who are those strange looking men, do you suppose?" Jack did not know. About this time, however, Joe Kuykendall was seen among them, and, thinking it was all right, the boys ventured on up, having, however, turned the horses loose and let them go back when they first saw the Mexicans, which was a fortunate thing, as they were of great service afterwards. As soon as they came among the Mexicans a saucy young officer lifted John Fenn from his horse and took him prisoner, as he did Jack also. The soldiers had on blue jackets with brass buttons, white pants, and caps with plumes in them. Kuykendall spoke to young Fenn and told him all about what had happened and that his mother and the other women escaped to the bottom. He also said in a low voice that they had killed Abe Kuyken-

dall, his brother, and got his gun, at the same time pointing out the Mexican who did it.

During that day and night John Fenn and the boy, Jack, were kept at Morton's, but Joe Kuykendall and the negro, Cain, were carried up to the ferry on the west side, where a portion of the Mexican army under Santa Anna were encamped. A negro woman, who had not left the place when the balance ran off, told John Fenn that the officer in command could speak English, and if he was hungry to ask permission from him and he would let him come into the kitchen and get something to eat. The boy did so, and the officer said, very pleasantly, "Certainly, go in and eat as much as you like." This officer, Mr. Fenn says, was a fine looking man, and he thinks his name was Sesma. Almonte was there also, always in a good humor and talked a great deal.

Mrs. Fenn had \$100 in a trunk in Morton's house, and her son saw the same young officer who captured him get it. The Mortons were all up at the ferry, and made their escape. Mrs. Fenn made no attempt to secure her money when they were getting away. Joe Kuykendall also had \$120 in silver in a trunk tied up in something, and a Mexican opened the trunk, tumbled the contents about, but failed to get his hand on the money, and then walked out and stood in front of the door. Kuykendall had been watching him and now went to the trunk, reached his hand into the corner of the trunk where he knew the money was, all the time keeping his eye on the Mexican, secured the silver hastily, hid it in his bosom, and then went out and asked the Mexican if he could take a short walk. This being granted, he walked out to an ant-bed, dug a hole in the top of it with the toe of his shoe, all the while keeping his eyes on the Mexican, dropped the money in and covered it with his foot without stooping, and then came back. This money was recovered when the settlers returned.

Early on the following morning the steamboat "Yellowstone" was heard coming down the river, and great confusion and excitement prevailed among the Mexicans. They lined the banks of the river on both sides, infantry and cavalry, and made a desperate attempt to capture it, the cavalry trying to throw lariats enough on it to tie it up, but failing in this, volley after volley was fired into it as they followed it down the river, but all of no avail. John Fenn witnessed all of this, and says the "Yellowstone" was plowing the water for all she was worth, lashing the banks with the waves on both sides as she went, and no one aboard of her being seen except the top of the pilot's head as he guided her around the bends, keeping in the middle of the river. Captain Ross, her commander, had cotton bales set up on end around the pilot house for protection against musket fire. Hundreds of balls struck her, but she kept on her way until the smoke from her stack disappeared down the river.

The negro, Cain, who had been taken up to the ferry, was allowed to come back to Morton's, and he told young Fenn that he heard Mexican officers talking the night before, and he thought the conclusion they came to was to have Fenn and Kuykendall shot and for him to escape if he could. So, while the "Yellowstone" was running the gauntlet of the Mexican army, John Fenn, the boy, Jack, and Winnie, a negro woman, who belonged to Eli Fenn, were standing near the Mexicans, watching the exciting run of the plucky Captain Ross and his pilot. At this time it occurred to young Fenn to be a fine opportunity to make his escape, and no sooner thought than acted on, he dashed away toward the bottom, followed by Jack and Winnie, the latter snatching up one of her little boys and placing him astride her neck as she went. They got a good start before being discovered, but then many shots were fired at them, cutting a quantity of leaves from the

trees in the edge of the bottom, but none took effect upon any of them, and they made good their escape, the soldiers not following them. The fugitives went in the direction of Harrisburg until they came to the camp of William Little and others, who were hiding amid the wild cane in the Brazos bottom. Here also were Mrs. Fenn, her little son, Jesse, and others who had escaped from Morton's.

By some unaccountable whim, Joe Kuykendall, by telling the Mexican commander at the ferry that his wife had gone to Red River and that he wanted a pass to follow her, it was promptly furnished and told to go. It need not be told that he stood not on the order of his going, but instead of the course toward Red River, he went down the Brazos as fast as his lame leg would allow him to get on the trail of his retreating people. On Jones' Creek, above Richmond, he found his own saddle where the Mexicans had dropped it, and, strapping it to his back, swam the creek and proceeded on to Morton's to get his wife's side-saddle if still there, thinking the Mexicans were all gone, but to his surprise walked into about 500 of them. They at once leveled their guns at him, thinking he had made his escape, but the inimitable Joe waved his pass at them and an officer advanced and examined it, and after perusing the contents, handed it back, with a wave of the hand, and said in Spanish, "Go, to Red River." Kuykendall, as the saying is, again "pulled his freight," but without attempting to secure his wife's saddle, and, entering the bottom, kept in the wake of the fleeing families, and arrived at Little's camp soon after the others. Not much time, however, was consumed at this place; he took the boy, Jack, and went after the horses, which the latter and John Fenn had turned loose, and returning with them hastily arranged for all those in his charge to go on in the night toward Harrisburg,

arriving at that place about sunrise; then went toward Lynch's Ferry on the San Jacinto River, crossing Vince's Bayou on the famous "Vince's Bridge." Here hundreds of terror-stricken and fleeing negroes were seen scattering all over the prairie after passing over the bayou. Arriving at Lynch's, where they intended to cross, the ferry boat was gone, whether sunk or carried away, they could not tell, but they were bound to get over the river, so Kuykendall went to work constructing a raft on which to cross the horses; a skiff being found, in which the women and children were safely transported to the east side. John Fenn and the boy, Jack, helped to make the raft, working manfully with all of their boyish strength until it was completed and everything crossed over. They now took their course for the Sabine River, and by this time their stock of provisions was exhausted. The women were sent on ahead, and Kuykendall, with young Fenn, prospected the country for something to eat. Six miles from the river they sighted a house, which they turned to, and saw half of a hog hanging to a limb in the yard. A woman came out, who seemed to be the only person present, and Kuykendall informed her of the situation—that they were running from the Mexicans, and that hungry women and children were ahead and he would like to have some of the pork. He was curtly informed that he could not have any of it. "I am Joe Kuykendall," he said, "and have money to pay for it." "You are a liar," the woman retorted. "Joe Kuykendall was captured at Fort Bend by the Mexicans and shot." However, when the money was produced part of the meat was sold and the inimitable Joe and his youthful companion went on their way rejoicing, to overtake their party and then stop and have a feast. People who had passed ahead of them told many things, and some of them exaggerated, about what had happened at Fort Bend. This woman was no doubt

the wife of a Tory, the house being near a place afterwards known as "Tory Hill," where more than one hundred men assembled and witnessed the battle of San Jacinto, cheering the while for Santa Anna, but when they saw his army beaten and flying and being annihilated by the patriots they scattered, and some of them in after years had the audacity to make an attempt to join the Texas Veteran Association. Before the party under Kuykendall arrived at the Sabine, a messenger from the field of San Jacinto overtook them and announced the news of the great victory and that Santa Anna was a prisoner, eleven hundred Mexicans slain, etc. Gladly, joyfully and with light hearts and tears of thankfulness the weary fugitives turned their faces toward the west to seek again their deserted homes.

As before stated, when it was no longer possible for Captain Wiley Martin, with his forty-six men, to hold the ferry at Thompson's—with Almonte attacking him in the rear from Morton's—he retreated up the river and joined General Houston at "Groce's Retreat" and was ordered to proceed from there to Nacogdoches in order to protect the families at that place from an anticipated attack from the Cherokee Indians, who had shown signs of hostilities toward the Texans in the commencement of their war with the Mexicans. Eli Fenn went with his company on this mission.

The Thompsons at the ferry were Jesse and his sons, Hiram, James and Jack. They had a large, roomy house; and the fleeing settlers from the west made for the ferry and many of them congregated at the hospitable home of the Thompsons, having protection there also by the men under Captain Martin. They scattered and fled from there on the approach of Santa Anna, when Martin told them he could no longer hold the place. Hiram Thompson was afterwards sheriff of Fort Bend County, and also held

the assessor's office. Thompson's Station, on the Santa Fe road, in Fort Bend, was named for him.

After Captain Martin and his men left, Santa Anna crossed his main army in the little boat which Eli Fenn made, although Martin had ordered it sunk when he abandoned the place.

Gradually the dispersed families drifted back to their homes, some to find them in ashes, and others plundered of every valuable that could be carried away. Eli Fenn, on his arrival, discovered that the supplies deposited in his house and abandoned had been appropriated by the Tory element, which, unfortunately, were present at this time the same as they were in 1776, during the war of the revolution. Three hundred dollars worth of these goods had been purchased on time at Columbia from White & Knight, and it cost Mr. Fenn two-thirds of a league of land before he finally got rid of the debt.

Eli Fenn died in 1840 on his farm, nineteen miles below Richmond, where he settled in 1837. Mrs. Fenn inherited a quarter of a league of land here from her father, David Fitzgerald, and it was located on the upper edge or west end of the grant fronting the Brazos River. John Fenn says he buried his father about four hundred yards below the bridge of the Santa Fe Railway, where the bridge spans the Brazos, and some think the remains were carried away by the great floods, but John Fenn is not certain, and rather thinks they were not, but the site of the exact spot is lost.

In the fall of 1842 General Adrian Wall came from Mexico with an invading army of 1,500 men and captured the city of San Antonio, then far out on the southwestern border. The citizens of the town, to the number of 55, made some defense, killed a bandmaster and drummer and others, and also General Wall's horse and then surrendered, and were carried prisoners to Mexico.

The news of this bold raid was carried by swift horsemen to the valleys of the Guadalupe, San Marcos and Colorado, and brave men mounted their horses and assembled, to the number of 200, on the Guadalupe, and were led by General Matthew Caldwell to San Antonio, and on the Sallado Creek, northeast of the city, gave the enemy battle and defeated them, and they returned to Mexico.

The Texans, however, were not satisfied and organized a force to invade Mexico under General Alexander Somerville. One of these companies was raised in Fort Bend County by Captain William Ryon, and among them was John R. Fenn, then not of age. John Shipman was lieutenant of the company. The expedition went to pieces on the Rio Grande, and about one-half of the men returned home with Somerville, but the others, less than 300, went on into Mexico under Captains Cameron, Ryon, Pierson and others. When the dissolution of the command took place, John Fenn said to Lieutenant Shipman, "John, which way shall we go?" "We are good soldiers," he said, "and must obey orders," but when the test came and his captain and a majority of the company went with those who were going into Mexico, he went too. John Fenn also turned his horse and attempted to follow, but Robert Herndon took hold of his bridle and said, "Come, John, you are young, go back with me." He yielded, and thus escaped the horrors, suffering, and, likely death, of many of those who did go. Mr. Fenn says that no doubt Herndon saved his life by his action on that occasion. The gallant John Shipman gave up his life in a vile dungeon in Mexico. Two other young men, William Sullivan and Woodson of Fort Bend, came back with Fenn.

In 1852 John R. Fenn married Miss Rebecca M. Williams, who was born in Wilkinson County, Mississippi, and came to Texas with her parents in 1845 and settled on Oyster Creek, one and a half miles from Mr. Fenn's pres-

ent home at "Clear Lake." This lake is on the Thomas Barnett league, and is in the shape of a half-moon and one mile in circumference, distant from Houston nineteen miles and forty-five from Galveston. Here is "Duke's Station" on the Santa Fe road, the property all belonging to Mr. Fenn except that of the railroad company. From this place west to the Brazos, three miles distant, Mr. Fenn owns a large farm, occupied by tenants, and consisting of as rich land as the Brazos bottom affords, the principal crops being cane, corn and cotton. This property was all accumulated by Mr. Fenn himself by judicious farming, trading and stock-raising. He also has a nice residence in Houston, where his family reside principally.

Around "Clear Lake" was at one time the home of the Bedi Indians and likely, also, at some period of the Craunk-aways. They had villages there, and when Mr. Fenn first settled there the signs of their habifations could be plainly seen, as was also many flint arrow-heads. The prairie comes up to the lake on the east, northeast, south and southwest, and at an early day, says Mr. Fenn, deer could be seen any day, and prairie chickens were so numerous and gentle that he could ride through the tall grass and kill them with a whip. Wild mustang horses were also numerous. Mr. Fenn was a cousin to Captain John Conner, who, at one time, was a resident of Fort Bend County and lived up near the Nibb's place. He commanded a company of rangers on the frontier of Texas and served with distinction as captain of a company in Bell's regiment of riflemen in the Mexican war of 1846. Mr. Fenn was at Corpus Christi on one occasion in 1846 and there saw the famous "Mustang Grey," who had just arrived with his company of border rangers from General Taylor's army in Mexico, having been sent back to protect the frontier from the fierce Comanche tribe of Indians. He saw Grey perform some remarkable feats on his famous

horse, "Gray Eagle," the mustang from which Grey, whose name was Mayberry, derived his pseudonym title of "Mustang." On this occasion he would run at full speed and pick up a silver dollar from the ground, and many other such like feats. Soon after this "Gray Eagle" was killed in a battle with the Comanches on the Nueces River.

In his young days Mr. Fenn was a good shot and fond of hunting, and can relate many interesting adventures. On one occasion the dogs treed something near the house, and, thinking it a coon, he and John N. Norris went to the place without a gun, thinking to chunk the "varmint" out and let the dogs have a fight with him. It proved to be a half-grown panther, and when the two men approached the tree it jumped out and ran between Mr. Fenn's legs, nearly upsetting him, but was caught by the dogs and killed by Norris with a knife. On another occasion Mr. Fenn shot a large bear and it fell near the bank of the Brazos River, where the bluff was very high, and out of sport, sprang from his horse, mounted the bear and drove his spurs to him. Bruin raised his head, gave a loud sniff, and was about to make a spring forward, his nose being nearly over the bluff, when Mr. Fenn quickly drew a pistol and shot him in the head. If the bear had made the leap he would have gone over the bank and carried the hunter with him on his back.

Mrs. Fenn, the mother of John R. Fenn, died in 1860 near Duke, and was buried there. John and Jesse were her only children. The latter married Miss Irene Trotter and died in Houston in 1874. His wife survived him until 1894 and also died in Houston, leaving a large family. The children of John R. and Rebecca Fenn, who survive (two dying in infancy), are Francis Marion Oatis, who married Miss Lottie Benson, of Charlottesville, Virginia. They have one son, Rutherford Benson. May, who married James Joseph McKeever, Jr., of Houston; Belle, un-

married, and Joseph Johnston Fenn, who married Miss Mollie Walker, of Houston; they have two children, John McKeever and Joseph Johnston. Mrs. Mary McKeever is a very prominent member of the "Daughters of the Republic," and is president of the San Jacinto Chapter of that order. She is also a member of the "Daughters of the American Revolution."

The Fenns, on the mother's side, have a long line of distinguished ancestors, some of whom are buried in Westminster Abbey. They are also connected with the Codringtons and Randolphs, of Virginia. Mrs. Fenn was a great granddaughter of General Nathaniel Randolph, who served on the staff of General Lafayette during the Revolutionary War, also great granddaughter of Ezekiel Ayers, who also served with distinction in the colonial army. Her grandfather, Isaac Williams, served for some time as Colonial Governor of the Province of Mississippi. An uncle, Governor Henry Johnson, was Governor of Louisiana and a member of the United States Senate.

Joe Kuykendall, mentioned so often in this sketch of Mr. Fenn, lived to be 90 years of age, and died five miles below Richmond at his ranch. He built a fine brick house, raised fine horses to sell and accumulated a nice property. His negro boy, Jack, also mentioned as being captured with Mr. Fenn and escaped with him, lived to be past 60 years of age, raised a large family, and was always most devotedly attached to Mr. Kuykendall.

CHAPTER XV.

CAPTAIN MOSLEY BAKER.

Captain Baker, being closely identified with the people of Fort Bend County during the passage of the Mexican army, through what is now Fort Bend, but then Austin County, where he made such a heroic stand at San Felipe as to cause the Mexican army to abandon the attempt there and come on down the river to Fort Bend and make the passage, we add this notice of him in our history:

He came from Alabama to Texas in 1834, and, becoming prominent in the affairs of the country, and so opposed to Mexican aggression, that he was on the list of those proscribed by Colonel Ugartechea of the Mexican army and his arrest ordered at San Felipe. While he was in command at that point, during the Mexican invasion, the town was burned—Captain Baker said by order of General Houston, but Houston said his order had been misunderstood, that he gave no such order. Captain Baker was wounded at the battle of San Jacinto, where his company displayed great gallantry. He represented Galveston in the Congress of the Republic in 1838 and 1839, and died of yellow fever in Houston, November the 4th, 1848.

CHAPTER XVI.

JOHN D. NEWELL,

Another prominent man of Fort Bend County, came from North Carolina to Texas in 1830, and was a member of the convention in 1833. He was a successful planter, and lived to make forty-five crops in Texas. He died in Richmond, Fort Bend County, in December, 1875.

CHAPTER XVII.

CAPTAIN WILEY MARTIN.

Captain Wiley Martin was born in Georgia in 1776. He led a very active, restless life, and when very young had been a soldier, school teacher and clerk in a store. In 1805 he became connected with Aaron Burr in some business enterprise, and in 1812 joined the army of General Harrison and served as a scout against the Indians in the army of the northwest, culminating in the decisive battle of Tippecanoe. In 1814 he joined the army of General Jackson against the Indians and participated in the famous battle of the "Horse Shoe." For his gallantry on this hotly contested field he was promoted from scout to a captaincy. After this he became involved in a duel, in which his antagonist was killed. He then resigned his captain's commission, and in 1825 came to Texas and joined Austin's colony. He was soon appointed an alcalde in the colony and became acting political chief of the department.

At the breaking out of the Texas Revolution, he opposed the Declaration of Independence as premature, but

raised a company and joined General Houston's army at Columbus. He and General Houston had served together under General Jackson and both took part in the "Horse Shoe" battle, where Houston, then a young ensign, was severely wounded.

When the Mexicans arrived near the Brazos Captain Martin was sent to guard the ferry at Fort Bend, as has already been narrated.

After the war he made Fort Bend County his home and went into the practice of law and was the first county judge of Fort Bend County. He had no family and died near Richmond in 1842 at the home of Captain Randall Jones. At the time of his death he was a member of the Texas Congress.

CHAPTER XVIII.

HENRY CASON.

There is an old negro man of the above name still living at Richmond, who belonged to Captain Randall Jones. He says that Captain Wiley Martin lived with Captain Jones and died there, and that he waited upon him during his sickness, which lasted about three weeks. He also remembers Deaf Smith and when he died, and for many years knew where his grave was, but the spot is lost now. Henry was brought to Texas in 1832 by his master, Joseph Thompson, who sold him to Captain Jones soon after. Thompson came from North Carolina, and old man Henry was born there, but does not remember in what year. The people of Richmond say he is about one hundred years old. He was here, a grown man, in 1836 when the Mexicans came and can remember how they looked. The steamboat "Yellowstone," he says, passed Thompson's Ferry at a

terrible rate of speed. The river was high and the captain put on all steam when he discovered that he was among the Mexicans. He says that the boat, in making the turn of the bend below the ferry, struck the bank several times and turned completely around, and a merchant of Columbia named White, who was aboard, tried to get off on the bank. During this time the Mexicans at the ferry were racing across the bend to cut off the boat at Richmond and try to capture it, and he could hear them shooting rapidly. The family of Captain Jones and the negroes, he says, stayed at Lake Creek on the Trinity River after the flight. He says General Houston stayed at their house in the bend several weeks, and suffered very much from a wound in the leg. If so, this was after the General's return from New Orleans. Another tall man also, named Johnson, came wounded in the leg and stayed for some time with Captain Jones. This might have been General Albert Sidney Johnston, who was wounded in a duel with General Félix Huston.

CHAPTER XIX.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

This distinguished gentleman, soldier and statesman, whose remains lie in the cemetery at Richmond, Fort Bend County, was born in Louisville, Georgia, August the 16th, 1798, and sprang from an old and respected French Huguenot family. When very young he showed such unmistakable signs of ability that he was chosen private secretary to Governor Troupe, of Georgia. In 1828 he was editor of a States-right paper and a candidate for Congress. The nominating convention, however, imposed some conditions to which he was not willing to submit, and he was defeated. In 1835 he came to Texas and made a formal declaration of his intention to become a citizen, and in a public speech in the town of Washington advocated the declaration of Texas independence. In consequence of the closing of the land offices he could not obtain an order for his headright and so returned temporarily to Georgia so as to complete his arrangements for a final removal to Texas. When he heard of the invasion of the country by Santa Anna he hurried back, landing at Velasco, at the mouth of the Brazos, not far from the time of the Goliad massacre. Many of Fannin's men were Georgians and belonged to families Lamar knew personally, and in a letter he wrote of them :

"Never did the broad light of day look upon a fouler murder; never were a better or braver people sacrificed to a tyrant's ferocity. The most of them were youthful heroes. I believe that our sole reliance should be upon our swords, and not upon the faith of Santa Anna. If the armies now on the retreat shall dare a counter march

there will not be in the next battle a Mexican left to tell the tale of their defeat (how near the prediction came to pass at San Jacinto); and if another expedition should be gotten up against us in the fall, or in the spring, there will come into our country such a cavalcade of heroes as will make their chivalry skip. The very first army that turns its face to the east will awaken a war which will move onward and onward over the broad prairies of the west, knowing no termination, until it reaches the walls of Mexico, where we will plant the standard of the single star and send forth our decrees in the voice of our artillery."

Lamar was anxious to join the army of General Houston, who was retreating from the west, but, finding no conveyance at Velasco for the interior, he finally started up the Brazos on foot, passing the spot where Richmond is now, and where he was to lay down his body when his eventful life was over. He finally reached the Texas army in their camp at "Groce's Retreat" and enlisted as a private soldier, and went on with the army to San Jacinto. In the cavalry fight of the 20th Lamar saved the life of young Walter P. Lane, afterwards distinguished in the Mexican war of 1846, and Civil War of 1861 as General Walter P. Lane. On the occasion at San Jacinto Lane's horse was killed, and fell so suddenly that the young soldier was thrown to the ground with such violence on his head that he lay stunned. A Mexican lancer seeing his condition rushed upon him, and was in the act of transfixing Lane with his lance, when Lamar, rushing to the rescue, shot him dead from his horse with a pistol and ran over another Mexican cavalryman, knocking him and his horse both to the earth, and then dismounting, assisted young Lane to the Texans' camp.

On the morning of the 21st of April, when the final battle came off, Burleson's regiment occupied the center and

Sherman on the left wing, Hockley to the right of Burleson, Millard on the right of the artillery, and the cavalry under Lamar, whose gallant conduct the day before had won him this command, on the right. The battle has often been described, and will only say that while the infantry were engaging the left and center of the enemy and driving them from their camp Lamar, at the head of the cavalry, was driving, routing and slaughtering the Mexican cavalry and riding down disordered squads of infantry. After this battle Lamar came into prominence as a military man and a statesman. General Houston's wound having disabled him for active service, Thomas J. Rusk, Secretary of War, was placed in command of the army and Lamar succeeded him in the war office, appointed to that position by President David G. Burnett.

On the 14th of May, 1836, a treaty was concluded with Santa Anna (then a prisoner in the hands of the Texans), part of which stipulated that he would give orders that, in the shortest time the Mexican troops (the other divisions not in the battle) should leave Texas, and that Santa Anna should be returned to Mexico immediately.

General Lamar was opposed to the release of Santa Anna, and was even of the opinion that he should be executed, as many other Texans at that time were. In a communication to President Burnett and his cabinet, he says:

"Santa Anna has placed himself without the pale of civilized warfare. His conduct does not permit me to view him in any other light. A chieftain battling for what he conceives to be the rights of his country, however mistaken in his views, may be privileged to make hot and vigorous war upon his foe; but when in violation of all the principles of civilized conflict, he avows and acts upon the revolting policy of extermination and rapine, slaying the surrendering, and plundering whom he slays, he forfeits the commiseration of mankind, by sinking the character of

the hero into that of the abhorred murderer. The President of Mexico has pursued such a war upon the citizens of this Republic. He has caused to be published to the world a decree denouncing as pirates, beyond the reach of his clemency, all who shall be found rallying around the standard of our independence. In accordance with this decree he has turned over to the sword the bravest and best of our friends and fellow citizens, after they have grounded their arms under the most solemn pledge that their lives should be spared. He has fired our dwellings, laid bare our luxuriant fields, excited servile and insurrectionary war, violated plighted faith, and inhumanly ordered the cold-blooded butchery of prisoners who had been betrayed into capitulation by heartless professions. I humbly conceive that the proclamation of such principles, and the perpetration of such crimes, place the offender out of the pale of negotiation, and demand at our hands other treatment than that is due to a mere prisoner of war. Instinct condemns him as a murderer, and reason justifies the verdict. Nor should the ends of justice be averted because of the exalted station of the criminal, nor be made to give way to the suggestions of interest or any cold considerations of policy. He who sacrifices human life at the shrine of ambition is a murderer, and deserves the punishment and infamy of one; the higher the offender the greater the reason for its infliction. I am, therefore, of the opinion that our prisoner, General Santa Anna, has forfeited his life by the highest of all crimes, and is not a suitable object for the exercise of our pardoning prerogatives."

Finding that these views were not in accord with the President and majority of the cabinet, he urged as the next best course the detention of Santa Anna until a treaty of peace could be concluded with Mexico, and in another communication says:

"I still feel that strict justice requires—that it is sustained by reason and will receive the sanction of the present generation, as well as the approving voice of posterity. If the cabinet could concur with me in this view of the subject and march boldly up to what I conceive to be the line of right, it would be a bright page in the history of this infant nation. It would read well in the future annals of the present period that the best act of this young Republic was to teach the Caligula of the age that in the administration of public justice the vengeance of the law falls alike impartially on the prince and the peasant. It is time that such a lesson should be taught the despots of the earth; they have too long enjoyed an exemption from the common punishment of crime. Enthroned in power, they banquet on the life of man, and then purchase security by the dispensation of favors. We have it in our power now to give an impulse to a salutary change in this order of things. We are sitting in judgment upon the life of a stupendous villain, who, like all others of his race, hopes to escape the blow of merited vengeance by the strong appeals which his exalted station enables him to make to the weak or selfish principles of nature. Shall he be permitted to realize his hopes or not? Shall our resentment be propitiated by promises, or shall we move sternly onward, regardless of favor or affection, to the infliction of a righteous punishment? Let the same punishment be awarded him which we would feel bound in honor and conscience to inflict on a subaltern, charged and convicted of a like offense. This is all that justice requires. If he has committed no act which would bring condemnation on a private individual, then let him be protected; but if he has perpetrated crimes which a man in humble life would have to expiate upon the scaffold, then why shield him from the just operations of a law to which another is held amenable? The exalted criminal finds security in negotiations,

whilst the subaltern offender is given over to the sword of the executioner. Surely no consideration of interest, or policy, can atone for such a violation of principle. View the matter in every possible light, and Santa Anna is still a murderer.

"It will be useless to talk to a soldier of San Jacinto about national independence, and national domain, so long as the bones of his murdered brethren are bleaching on the prairies unavenged. Treble the blessings proposed to be gained by this negotiation will be considered as poor and valueless when weighed against the proud and high resentment which the soldiers feel for wrongs received. In the day of battle the animating cry was "Alamo," and why? Because it was known that the slaughterer of the Alamo was then on the field; it was him they sought. It was not against the poor and degraded instruments of his tyranny that they warred; they fell, it is true, before our avenging strokes like grass before the reaper's sickle.

"The great difficulty in dealing with our prisoner as his crimes deserve, arises from the fact that education will not permit us to strip him of his ill-gotten honors and view him in the light of a private individual."

General Sam Houston was elected the first President of the new Republic after the battle of San Jacinto, and General Lamar was elected Vice President.

The Constitution of the Republic provided that the first President elected by the people should hold his office for two years and be ineligible to a re-election during the next term, while succeeding Presidents should hold their office for three years and be alike ineligible. As, under this provision, Houston's term would expire on the second Monday in December, 1838, the people had become interested in the selection of his successor. M. B. Lamar and Peter W. Grayson were the candidates brought out by their respective friends and supported with considerable zeal. The

Texas newspapers in that year abounded in charges and denials—the same freedom and abuse of political discussion to be seen in the press of the United States. Before the election came off, which was held on the 3rd of September, Colonel Grayson put an end to his life at Bean's Station, in Tennessee. General Lamar was elected President with but little opposition, and David G. Burnett was chosen Vice-President. On the 9th of December, 1838, the ceremony of the inauguration of President Lamar occurred in front of the capitol, and in the presence of an immense concourse of people. After some remarks by President Houston, General Lamar delivered his inaugural address, part of which is here given:

“The character of my administration may be anticipated in the domestic nature of our government and the peaceful habits of the people looking upon agriculture, commerce and the useful arts, as the true basis of all material strength and glory. It will be my leading policy to awaken into vigorous activity the wealth, talent and enterprise, of the country, and at the same time to lay the foundation of those higher institutions for moral and mental culture, without which no government or democratic principle can prosper, nor the people long preserve their liberties.”

On the subject of annexation, he said:

“I have never been able myself to perceive the policy of the desired connection, or discover in it any advantage, either civil, political or commercial, which could possibly result to Texas. But, on the contrary, a long train of consequences, of the most appalling character and magnitude, have never failed to present themselves whenever I have entertained the subject, and forced upon my mind the unwelcome condition that the step, once taken, would present a lasting regret, and ultimately prove as disas-

trous to our liberty and hopes as the triumphant sword of the enemy."

President Lamar sent his message to Congress on the 21st of December, and the *Telegraph* comments thus:

"It was received with general approbation. It was pleasing to notice the remarkable degree of confidence and esteem that was everywhere manifested toward President Lamar. He is almost unanimously regarded as the pride and ornament of his country; and from his administration the most fortunate results are expected."

The Texas Almanac of 1858 contains the following:

"The policy of Lamar's administration embraced four leading objects:

"First: The defense of the country, and especially that of the frontier, which was crying aloud for protection against the merciless savages.

"Second: The obtaining of the recognition of our independence by the principal maritime powers of Europe, and of establishing with them the best commercial relations.

"Third: The purification of the different departments of government, and of establishing a rigid responsibility among public officers of every grade and class.

"Fourth: The creation of an educational fund by adequate appropriation of land for that purpose.

"These ends were not only carried out effectually by Lamar, to the honor of himself and glory of the nation, but the blessings that flowed from them were immediately felt by the peace and safety that reigned at home, as well as by the character and importance which the country acquired abroad.

"It will be remembered that he came into office when the nation had neither credit nor money. Yet he had the frontier to protect, the seat of government to remove (the present capital had just been laid off and named for Stephen F. Austin) on the extreme borders, to erect all

necessary public buildings, to support the government, pay our foreign ministers, provide for the army, keep the navy on the Gulf, extensive mail routes to establish, and to meet a multiplicity of demands growing out of unforeseen contingencies, incidental to the condition of the country; and yet, he contrived to achieve all these ends, without exceeding in a single instance to the amount of one cent, the annual appropriation made by Congress for the support of the government, including even the expense of the Santa Fe expedition, the surveying of the University lands, and other heavy disbursements which he was compelled to assume the responsibility of making. It may be safely asserted that no Chief Magistrate ever effected so much with so little expense to the nation he ruled, and that he should have accomplished so much in so short a period, and secured so many blessings, with such limited resources, must ever be a matter of surprise, and cannot fail to place General Lamar among the wisest statesmen and the purest patriots of the age."

At the commencement of the Mexican war of 1846 General Lamar was appointed Division Inspector, under General Henderson. At the battle of Monterey he displayed his usual conspicuous gallantry, as he ever did where battles were fought and he had an opportunity of getting into it.

In 1847 he was Post Commander at Laredo, where he effectually held the Indians in check. On his return from that post he was elected to the Legislature.

In 1851 General Lamar married his second wife, Miss Maffit, daughter of Rev. John N. Maffit, and sister of Commodore Maffit of the Confederate Navy. Soon after this marriage he settled at Richmond, Fort Bend County, and lived a quiet life among the people with whom he had come to make his home, and who honored and respected him for his virtues and the integrity of character. He was only once

more in public life, and that was for a short time, as United States Minister to the Argentine Confederation. He died at his home in Richmond on the 19th of December, 1859, aged 61 years, four months and two days, and his remains now rest in the Richmond cemetery among other noted men and women who made Fort Bend County their home. A granite monument was erected over the grave of General Lamar, the shaft of which was blown down in the great storm of 1900, and still lays prone upon the ground. The wife of Lamar also lies by his side.

CHAPTER XX.

MEXICAN ACCOUNT OF THE BATTLE OF SAN JACINTO.

BY COL. PEDRO DELGADO,
of Gen. Santa Anna's Staff.

Before commencing the account of Delgado, we will state that the Mexican army was at Fort Bend, and that all of the people had left, including the company of Captain Martin.

"On the 14th of April, 1836, His Excellency, the President, ordered his staff to prepare to march, with only one skiff, and leaving his own and the officer's baggage with General Ramirez y Sesma, who was instructed to remain at the crossing of the Brazos, whither we expected to return within three days.

"On the 13th the flank companies of the battalions of Matamors, Aldama, Guerrero, Toluco, Mexico, and, I believe, Guadalajara, had commenced crossing the river with a six-pounder commanded by Lieutenant Ignacio Arrenal, and fifty mounted men of Tampico and Guanajuato, who formed his Excellency's escort. The whole force amounted to 600 men, more or less.*

"At about 4 o'clock p. m. His Excellency started for Harrisburg, with the force above mentioned. The bottom of the Brazos is a dense and lofty timber, over three leagues wide. On reaching the prairie, we found a small creek, which offered only one crossing.†

The infantry passed it comfortably over a large tree, which had fallen in such a manner as to

* Santa Anna and his staff crossed in the little boat at Morton's, and the cavalry and infantry crossed at Thompson's.

† This was Oyster Creek.

form a convenient bridge. The ammunition was passed over by hand, but His Excellency, to avoid delay, ordered the baggage and the commissary stores to remain packed on the mules.* However, the water was soon over the pack saddles, and the opposite bank was steep and slippery. Several mules fell down, interfering with each other, which resulted in a terrible jamming of officers and dragoons, pack mules and horses. This, together with shouts and curses, completed a scene of wild confusion, which His Excellency witnessed with hearty laughter. Several dragoons and officers fell in the water; the stores were damaged, and two mules were drowned. So much for the precipitation of this march.

"The sun had already set when we resumed the march, over a muddy prairie. The night was dark; a great many men straggled off, and our piece of artillery bogged at every turn of the wheel. Such was our condition, when, at about 9 o'clock, His Excellency ordered a halt in a small grove, where we passed the night without water."

"On the 15th, at 8 o'clock a. m., most of the stragglers having joined us, we started again.

"At about noon we reached a plantation abundantly supplied with corn, meal, sheep, and hogs; it had a good garden and a fine cotton gin. We halted to refresh men and beasts.

"At 3 o'clock p. m., after having set fire to the dwelling and gin houses, we resumed our march.† Here His Excellency started ahead with his staff and escort, leaving General Castrillon in command of the infantry. We traveled at a brisk trot, at least ten leagues, without halting, until we reached the vicinity of Harrisburg, at about 11 o'clock at night. His Excellency, with an adjutant and fifteen dragoons, went on foot to that town, distant about

* This haste of Santa Anna was in order to capture President Burnett and his cabinet at Harrisburg.

† This was Wm. Stafford's place.

one mile, entered it, and succeeded in capturing two Americans, who stated that Zavalla and other members of the so-called Government of Texas had left the morning before for Galveston. A part of the infantry joined us on the following morning at daylight.

"On the 16th we remained at Harrisburg to await our broken-down stragglers, who kept dropping in until 2 or 3 o'clock p. m.

"On the opposite side of the bayou we found two or three houses well supplied with wearing apparel, mainly for women's use, fine furniture, an excellent piano, jars of preserves, chocolate, fruit, etc., all of which were appropriated for the use of His Excellency and his attendants. I and others obtained only what they could not use. After the houses had been sacked and burned down, a party of Americans fired on our men from the woods. It is wonderful that some of us, camped as we were along the banks of the bayou, were not killed. The quartermaster-sergeant of Matamoras was seriously wounded. This incident took place at 5 o'clock p. m. On the same day Colonel Almonte started from Harrisburg for New Washington with the cavalry.

"On the 17th, at about 3 o'clock p. m., His Excellency, after having instructed me to burn the town, started for New Washington with the troops. It was nearly dark when we had finished crossing the bayou. Then a courier from Colonel Almonte arrived, upon which His Excellency ordered Iberri to start with his adjutant, bearing dispatches to General Filasola, on the Brazos. At 7 o'clock p. m. we resumed our march. Our piece of artillery bogged at every moment in some hole or ravine. As it was found impossible for the draught mules to cross a narrow bridge,* rendered still more dangerous by darkness and rain, His Excellency instructed General Castrillon to head the

* This was Vince's Bridge across Vince's Bayou.

bayou with the cannon three leagues above, with an escort of only one company of infantry

“Shortly after 10 o'clock at night a violent storm set in; darkness caused us to wander from our course, in consequence of which His Excellency ordered a halt, requiring every man to stand in the ranks, without shelter from the rain.

“On the morning of the 18th we moved on, our cannon being still far away. At noon we reached New Washington, where we found flour, soap, tobacco, and other articles, which were issued to the men. His Excellency instructed me to mount one of his horses, and, with a small party of dragoons, to gather beeves for the use of the troops. In a short time I drove in more than 100 head of cattle, so abundant are they in that country.†

“General Castrillon came in at 5 o'clock p. m., with the cannon. On the 19th His Excellency ordered Captain Barragon to start with a detachment of dragoons to reconnoitre Houston's movements. We halted at that place, all being quiet. On the 20th, at about 8 o'clock a. m., everything was ready for the march. We had burnt a fine warehouse on the wharf, and all the houses in the town, when Captain Barragan rushed in at full speed, reporting that Houston was close on our rear, and that his troops had captured some of our stragglers, and had disarmed and dispatched them. There is in front of New Washington a dense wood, through which runs a narrow lane, about half a league in length, allowing passage to pack mules, in single file only, and to mounted men in double file. This lane was filled with our pickets, the drove of mules, and

†These cattle belonged to Dr. Johnson Hunter, he having turned 600 head loose along the banks of the San Jacinto the day before. He was trying to get them across the river, but the boat being sunk, he had to abandon them and save himself and family.

the remainder of the detachment. His Excellency and staff were still in the town.

"Upon hearing Barragan's report, he leaped on his horse and galloped off at full speed for the lane, which being crowded with men and mules, did not afford him as prompt an exit as he wished. However, knocking down one, and riding over another, he overcame the obstacles, shouting at the top of voice: "The enemy are coming! The enemy are coming!" The excitement of the General-in-chief had such a terrifying effect upon the troops that every face turned pale; order could no longer be preserved, and every man thought of flight, or of finding a hiding place, and gave up all idea of fighting. Upon reaching the prairie a column of attack was formed, with trepidation and confusion, amidst incoherent movements and contradictory orders.

"At this moment, His Excellency did me the honor to place me in command of the artillery and ordnance, giving me his orders verbally, with strict injunctions as to my responsibility. Meanwhile, the officers having dismounted and taken their stations in front of their commands, we moved in search of the enemy, with flankers on both sides to explore the woods. As the knapsacks might impede the movements of the men, His Excellency ordered that they should be dropped on the road, still preserving our formation. The order was obeyed, the knapsacks being left in the keeping of Providence, or fortune, and we resumed our march.

"It was 2 o'clock p. m. when we descried Houston's pickets at the edge of a large wood, in which he concealed his main force. Our skirmishers commenced firing; they were answered by the enemy, who fell back in the woods. His Excellency reached the grounds with our main body, with the intention, as I understand, of attacking at once; but they kept hidden, which prevented him from ascertaining their position. He, therefore, changed the

dispositions, and ordered the company of Toluca to deploy as skirmishers in the direction of the woods. Our cannon, established on a small elevation, opened its fire. The enemy responded with a discharge of grape, which wounded severely Captain Urrizia and killed his horse.

"At this moment His Excellency came to me and ordered me to unload the ordnance stores, and to turn over the twenty mules on which they were packed to Captain Baragan, who was instructed to bring in the knapsacks which had been left on the road. I was cautious enough to part with only eighteen mules, keeping two for an emergency.

"Then His Excellency went to look for a camping ground, and established his whole force along the shore of the San Jacinto Bay, at least one mile from where I had been left. About an hour later I received orders, through Colonel Bringas, to come into camp immediately with the ordnance stores and the piece of artillery. That officer was, also, the bearer of orders to the company of the Toluca, the only force that checked the enemy, to fall back likewise. I observed to Colonel Bringas that it would take some time to execute this order—the chests, as His Excellency knew, being piled up on the ground, and I having only two mules upon which to load them; and, furthermore, that should the company of Toluca leave me unsupported, the enemy would probably pounce upon the stores, all of which would go to the devil. Colonel Bringas advised me to do as best I could, adding, that I ought to know that no observations could be made to His Excellency, and he had no desire to argue with him, in the raving state of mind in which he was.

"The Colonel parted with me, followed by the company of Toluca. It may well be imagined that, as soon as the enemy saw our artillery and stores unprotected he paid them special attention. He established his cannon in such a manner as to disable our gun, and to support an at-

tack, should it take place. Their first shot shattered the caisson on the timber; another scattered about our ordnance boxes; another, again, killed two fine mules; and they kept annoying us during the two long hours it took me to remove, with only two mules, forty odd boxes of ammunition. How the General-in-Chief had endangered the whole division! I acknowledge that I had never before been in such danger. What would have become of me, if, in consequence of the General's order, the enemy had captured our artillery and stores, as he might have done, unsupported as I was. I had no resource left but to make the best defense I could with my gun. For this purpose I instructed Lieutenant Arenal to have it loaded with grape, and not to fire until the enemy came within close range, in order to both spare ammunition and to intimidate the assailants. At length, at 5 o'clock p. m., my duty was performed, and, as I entered the camp with the last load, I was closely followed by the enemy's cavalry. His Excellency, noticing it, instructed me to order Captain Aguirre, who commanded our cavalry, to face the enemy, without gaining ground. This movement checked the enemy for a few moments; but, soon after, they dashed upon our dragoons, and were close enough to engage them with the sword, without, however, any material result. Then, His Excellency, deploying several companies as skirmishers, forced the enemy back to his camp, on which he retired sluggishly and in disorder.

"This last engagement took place at sundown. At day-break, on the 21st, His Excellency ordered a breastwork to be erected for the cannon. It was constructed with pack-saddles, sacks of hard bread, baggage, etc. A trifling barricade of branches ran along its front and right.

"The camping ground of His Excellency's selection was, in all respects, against military rules. Any youngster would have done better.

"We had the enemy on our right, within a wood, at long musket range. Our front, although level, was exposed to the fire of the enemy, who could keep it up with impunity from his sheltered position. Retreat was easy for him on his rear and right, while our troops had no space for maneuvering. We had in our rear a small grove, reaching to the bay shore, which extended on our right as far as New Washington. What ground had we to retreat upon in case of a reverse? From sad experience, I answer, none!

"A few hours before the engagement, I submitted to General Castrillon a few remarks upon the subject, suggested by my limited knowledge. But he answered: 'What can I do, my friend? I know it well, but I cannot help it. You know that nothing avails here against the caprice, arbitrary will and ignorance of that man.' This was said in an impassioned voice, and in close proximity to His Excellency's tent.

"At 9 o'clock a. m. General Cos came in with a reinforcement of about 500 men. His arrival was greeted with a roll of drums and with joyful shouts. As it was represented to His Excellency that these men had not slept the night before, he instructed them to stack their arms, to remove their accoutrements, and go to sleep quietly in the adjoining grove. No important incident took place until 4:30 p. m. At this fatal moment, the bugler on our right signalled the advance of the enemy upon that wing. His Excellency and staff were asleep; the greater number of the men were, also, sleeping; of the rest, some were eating, others were scattered in the woods in search of boughs to prepare shelter. Our line was composed of musket stacks. Our cavalry were riding bare-back, to and from water.

"I stepped upon some ammunition boxes, the better to observe the movements of the enemy. I saw that their formation was a mere line in one rank, and very extended.

In their center was the Texas flag; on both wings they had two light cannons; well manned. Their cavalry was opposite our front, overlapping our left.

"In this disposition, yelling furiously, with a brisk fire of grape, muskets, and rifles, they advanced resolutely upon our camp. There the utmost confusion prevailed. General Castrillon shouted on one side; on another Colonel Almonte was giving orders; some cried out to commence firing; others, to lie down to avoid grape-shots. Among the latter was His Excellency. Then, already, I saw our men flying in small groups, terrified, and sheltering themselves behind large trees. I endeavored to force some of them to fight, but all efforts were in vain—the evil was beyond remedy; they were a bewildered and panic-stricken herd. The enemy kept up a brisk cross-fire of grape on the woods. Presently we heard in close proximity, the unpleasant noise of their clamors. Meeting no resistance, they dashed lightning-like upon our deserted camp.

"Then I saw His Excellency running about in the utmost excitement, wringing his hands, unable to give an order. General Castrillon was stretched on the ground wounded in the leg. Colonel Trevino was killed, and Colonel Marcial Aguirre was severely injured. I saw, also, the enemy reaching the ordnance train, and killing a corporal and two gunners who had been detailed to repair cartridges which had been damaged on the previous evening.

"Everything being lost, I went, leading my horse, which I could not mount because the firing had rendered him restless and fractious, to join our men, still hoping that we might be able to defend ourselves, or to retire under the shelter of the night. This, however, could not be done. It is a known fact, that Mexican soldiers, once demoralized, cannot be controlled, unless they are thoroughly inured to war.

"On the left, and about a musket-shot distant from our camp, was a small grove, on the bay shore. Our disbanded herd rushed for it, to obtain shelter from the horrid slaughter carried on all over the prairie by the blood-thirsty usurpers. Unfortunately, we met, on our way, an obstacle difficult to overcome. It was a bayou, not very wide, but rather deep. The men, on reaching it, would helplessly crowd together, and were shot down by the enemy, who was close enough not to miss his aim. It was there that the greatest carnage took place. Upon reaching that spot, I saw Colonel Almonte swimming across the bayou with his left hand, and holding up his right, which grasped his sword. I stated before that I was leading my horse, but in this critical situation, I vaulted on him, and with two leaps, he landed me on the opposite bank of the bayou. To my sorrow, I had to leave that noble animal, mired, at that place, and to part with him, probably forever. As I dismounted, I sank in the mire waist deep, and I had the greatest trouble to get out of it, by taking hold of the grass. Both my shoes remained in the bayou. I made an effort to recover them, but I soon came to the conclusion that, did I tarry there, a rifle shot would certainly make an outlet for my soul, as had happened to many a poor fellow around me. Thus, I made for the grove, bare-footed.

"There I met a number of other officers, with whom I wandered at random, buried in gloomy thoughts upon our tragic disaster. We still entertained a hope of rallying some of our men, but it was impossible. The enemy's cavalry surrounded the grove, while his infantry penetrated it, pursuing us with fierce and blood-thirsty feelings.

"There they killed Colonel Batres, and it would have been all over with us had not Providence placed us in the hands of the noble and generous captain of cavalry, Allen, who, by great exertion, saved us repeatedly from being

slaughtered by drunken and infuriated volunteers.* Thence they marched us to their camp. I was bare-footed; the prairie here had recently been burnt, and the blades of grass, hardened by the fire, penetrated like needles the soles of my feet, so that I could scarcely walk. This did not prevent them from striking me with the butt end of their guns, because I did not walk as fast as they wanted me to. These savages struck, with their bayonets, our wounded soldiers lying on the way; others, following them, consummated the sacrifice with a musket or a pistol shot.

"I cannot forbear mentioning an incident which affected me deeply, and, I believe, had the same effect on my companions. We were about one hundred and fifty officers and men, picked up by Allen's party, who marched us to their camp under close guard. I have no doubt that the Americans, amid the hurrahs and exultation of their triumph, were lavish of insults; however, not understanding their language, we did not feel it. But, one of our own countrymen, who had joined the enemy's cause, assailed us, in our own language, with such a volley of threats, insults and abuse, that the tongue of the vile and recreant Mexican seemed to have been wrought in the very caves of hell, and set in motion by Lucifer himself. 'Now, you shall see,' he said, 'contemptible and faithless assassins, if you do not pay with your vile blood for your murders at the Alamo and La Bahiah. The time has come when the just cause we defend triumphs over you; you shall pay with your heads for the arson, robberies, and depredations you committed in our country.'**

"What a welcome for honorable men, who knew, in the depths of their hearts, that they had acted in accordance with the dictates of duty, when, unfortunately, prostrate,

*Delgado tells a falsehood; Houston's men were not drunk.

**This was one of Captain Juan M. Seguin's men.

and humbled in the extreme, the fate of war had placed their lives at the mercy of these brigands, and when they were awaiting, with resignation, the consummation of the sacrifice! Can such wicked men exist?

"At last, we reached the camp. We were seated on the ground by twos, as we had marched. On the bay shore our thirst had been quenched with an abundance of water, which Allen and others allowed to be passed from hand to hand, until all of us were satisfied. A crowd gathered around us asking with persistent impertinence: 'General Santa Anna? General Cos?' We knew not the fate of these gentlemen; but to rid ourselves of their repeated questions, we answered: Dead! Dead! I still wore my embroidered shoulder straps on my jacket; they attracted their attention, and one after another would say: 'You general?' 'Me no general!' would I answer, until one of the indefatigable questioners tore off my shoulder straps angrily. I was glad of it, as they ceased importuning me with their questions.

"After having kept us sitting about an hour and a half, they marched us into the woods, where we saw an immense fire, made up of a huge pile of wood, even whole trees being used. I and several of my companions were silly enough to believe that we were about to be burned alive, in retaliation for those who had been burned in the Alamo. We should have considered it an act of mercy to be shot first. Oh, the bitter and cruel moment! However, we felt considerably relieved when they placed us around the fire to warm ourselves and dry our wet clothes. We were surrounded by twenty-five or thirty sentinels. You should have seen those men, or rather phantoms, converted into moving armories; some wore two, three, and even four braces of pistols, a cloth bag of very respectable size, filled with bullets, a powder horn, a sabre or bowie knife, besides a rifle, musket, or carbine. Every one of them had

in his hand a burning candle. I wonder where they obtained so many of them, for the heat of their hands and the breeze melted them very fast, and yet that illumination was kept up all night. Was this display of light intended to prevent us from attempting to escape? The fools! Where could we go in that vast country, unknown to us, intersected by large rivers and forests, where wild beasts and hunger, and where they themselves would destroy us.

"Early on the 22nd our camp was visited by the so-called Secretary of War, Mr. Rusk, who asked us endless questions upon the grand topic of the day—our defeat and their unexpected success. Colonel Juan N. Almonte, the only one of us who spoke English, answered his questions. That gentleman renewed his visits. Once he asked for a list of the names, surnames, and rank of the captured officers, which list was promptly made up by Almonte, with a pen or pencil, I do not remember which, and handed over immediately.

"There were not wanting among us officers sufficiently forgetful of duty and of the dignity and decorum of their rank, to mingle with the enlisted men, because that it was rumored, that from sergeant down would be spared, and that from lieutenant upwards would be shot. What a shame that such contemptible beings, destitute of honor, should still associate with those who have always proudly borne, and gloried in their noble badges of office.

"Some Americans would come and tell us, in broken Spanish, what was going on amongst their leaders, stating that the officers and the people—that is, the soldiery, were holding meetings to consider the question whether we should be shot before notifying it to their government, or whether the execution should be postponed until ordered by the superior authority. Such was the state of our affairs when the assembly, roll-call, or something

else, was beaten. Over a hundred men fell into line; they loaded their guns and then stood at ease. We felt rather nervous. I, for one, was as cold as ice, believing that those in favor of immediate execution had carried the point, and that the fatal moment had come. Soon, however, our confidence returned, when a good man (they are to be found everywhere) told us to cheer up, as Houston, Rusk, Allen and others, whom I respect for it, had opposed the motion. In fact, the party that had been formed near us went to relieve the guard.

“At this time they began bringing in on wagons and our mules, the arms, stores, clothing, baggage, and all the spoils of our camp, which took four whole days.

“At 2 o'clock p. m. His Excellency, the General-in-Chief, Don Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, arrived under the charge of a mounted soldier. He wore linen trousers, a blue cotton jacket, a cap and red-worsted slippers. His captor did not know him, but noticing a motion of curiosity among us as he approached, he became satisfied that he was conducting no common officer, and reported at once with him to General Houston. The latter sent two of his adjutants to inquire of us whether Santa Anna had lost any teeth; some answered that they did not know, but others with more candor, or, perhaps, with less discretion, said: ‘Yes, gentlemen, and you can further say to your general, that the person just brought in is President Santa Anna himself.’ The news spread over the whole camp, and the inquisitive fellows who surrounded us ran to strike up an acquaintance with His Majesty. Some of them proposed to fire salutes, and to make other demonstrations to celebrate the capture of such a lofty person. But Houston courteously forbade it. From this time we were left alone, His Excellency having become the center of attraction.

“On the 23rd, seventy or eighty loads of ordnance stores

had already been brought in and deposited, together with piles of loaded muskets and of cartridge boxes, in close proximity to our camp.

"We had noticed repeatedly that some of the Americans went about that combustible matter, and even handled it, with their pipes in their mouths. In one of these instances of carelessness some grains of powder scattered on the ground were ignited. The fire reached the cartridge boxes and their contents, and soon extended to the pans of the muskets, which exploded like an infernal machine. The prairie, too, was set on fire, and the covers of the ordnance boxes were already burning. Those nearest the scene of danger took to flight, we and our sentinels followed, and, although we knew that they would be dissatisfied at our race, and might possibly fire upon us, we kept on running. Then the guard and even some of the officers, in view of the increasing danger, chose not to remain hindmost, and kept pace with us, expecting at every moment the fatal explosion. We had run a considerable distance, when we turned round, and saw that the fire had been extinguished. We could not help applauding the resolution and bold determination with which some of these extraordinary men had rushed into the flames, which they smothered with their feet and blankets, and some water drawn from the bayou. We had a narrow escape. I thought at one time that the conquerers of San Jacinto would all be blown up into eternity; not, however, without some regret on my part to have to go the way they went, owing to their stupid carelessness.

"On the 24th, several batches of officers and men were brought in by the numerous scouting parties sent out to search the country.

"At 5 o'clock p. m. a steamboat arrived, having on board the Texas President, Vice-President Zavala, and other members of the administration.

"The artillery on board, consisting of two guns, fired a salute of five rounds; the troops in camp were formed in line, and received their Supreme Magistrate with hurrahs; then he was conducted triumphantly to General Houston's tent.

"Among the Yankees who spoke Spanish a little, and came to talk with, or rather to insult, us was a hunchback—an inveterate talker. The wretch, who did not measure a yard and a half above the ground, took a wicked pleasure in bringing us stirring and unpleasant news. He boasted much of his gallantry, and when reciting his many acts of prowess, the little rascal would say: 'Well, did Santa Anna believe he could trifle with us? Not he! He can, perhaps, fight his own people, because he knows them, and knows also, that they are not brave, and gallant, and determined, as we were. He thought us far away, poor fellow! Without noticing that we were on his track, keeping him in sight, counting, with our spy glasses, on tree tops, his men, one by one, and allowing him to come and entrap himself in this corner, with no means of escape, as we had burnt the bridge over the bayou, behind him, and had made our preparations to bag every one of you. If he does not sign at once a treaty, putting an end to the war, and removing every Mexican soldier from our territory, it will cost, not only his life, but also the lives of all of you prisoners.' Such was the conversation of our bold little hunchback.

"On the 25th, General Cos and Captains Bachiller and Iberri were confined with us. The presence of the general had created such a sensation among the conquerors that they crowded and quarreled for a sight of him—they would even push off the sentinels. The general found it expedient to lie down, wrapping his head in his blanket, to avoid the annoyance of their impertinent curiosity. Scoundrels were not wanting who would have murdered him.

"On the 26th our property was sold at auction. It was hard to see them breaking our trunks open and every one of them loaded with our shirts, trousers, coats, etc., whilst we remained with what we had on our bodies.

"I saw my boots going, while my blistered feet were wrapped up in pieces of raw hide. To make up for our cloaks, overcoats, and blankets, which belonged to the highest bidder, they favored us with great-coats of our own soldiers, which were so lousy that we had the greatest trouble to rid ourselves of the vermin; and, still, we had nothing else with which to cover ourselves.

"His Excellency, the General-in-Chief, alone had the good fortune to preserve the most, if not the whole, of his baggage.

"The saddles and pack mules belonging to our division were also distributed among the conquering officers and soldiers.

"It was quite amusing to see these gentlemen putting riding saddles on some fractious and wicked mules, which were nothing beyond the pack. They would adorn them with the green and red cords which our voltigeurs and grenadiers wore on their caps, placing them on their ears, necks or backs. One did put two pair of blinds on one mule—one on the headstall, as it should be, and the other on the nose-band, stopping the poor animals nostrils.

"They would also bedeck their mules with the epaulets of our officers, caring little if one was white and the other yellow—they glittered, that was enough. They delighted in covering their animals with all sort of trappings and colors, after the fashion of our bull-fight clowns. One of these young chevaliers attracted more especially my attention. He had saddled up and adorned his mule, without, however, noticing that the circingle was loose. He mounted the long-eared steed, which was held fast by one of his friends, while he steadied himself in the saddle.

They let go, and you should have seen the brute scamper over God's own green fields, and scattering about its trappings and ornaments. Lo! our poor fellow flies on high, with his saddle, and drops heavily on the ground, from which he could not rise, his ribs being somewhat damaged. This was not the worst, but the mule, once in the woods, could not be caught again. Trials of horsemanship lasted the whole day, but most of the champions shared the fate of the first one. How strange these men are! Many of them act and feel like the wild Comanche.

"On the 27th and following days, no incident took place worth being noticed. I will only say, to the everlasting shame of our conquerors, that they kept us starving, sleeping in the mud, and exposed to frequent and heavy showers. Still more intolerable was the stench arising from the dead on the field of San Jacinto, which they had not the generosity to burn or bury, after the time-honored custom, regardless of their own comfort and health and those of the surrounding settlements.

"On the 3rd of May, at 4 o'clock p. m., we were sent to another camp, distant a little over one league. There were two or three frame houses, but they were occupied by both the conquering and conquered generals, lodging being provided for us under the trees. There, again, an attempt was made to murder General Cos. Four days passed along quietly.

"On the 7th, at 5 o'clock p. m., they marched us on board the steamboat 'Yellowstone,' where we found General Santa Anna, the President, Senor Zavala, and other dignitaries of their so-called government. Shortly after, General Houston was carried on board on his cot, on his way to New Orleans, to obtain medical attendance for a wound he had received in his leg at San Jacinto. There was also the Mexican General Adrian Woll, who had come from our army under flag of truce. This gallant general, our good

friend, was dismissed at sundown, being hardly allowed to embrace two or three of us, with a few hurried words, as we were surrounded by very strict and insolent guards. I saw, as he landed, tears of indignation gushing forth from his eyes at the wretched condition of his brothers-in-arms. I am sure he wished he was lightning, to smite our oppressors. In parting with us he expressed the deepest sorrow.

"The officer under whose charge we were on board, was, if I do not mistake, a physician, and was extremely harsh and tyrannical.

"After sunset, we were no longer permitted to move, having to sleep on deck, crowded, like bars of soap, on top of each other. Positive orders had been given to the sentinels to blow our brains out if any man raised his head. Therefore, without obtaining a drink of water, or being allowed to attend to the wants of nature, we laid our heads down motionless, until sunrise.

"Very early on the 8th, after striking a bell three times, as is customary on these vessels, the machine was set in motion, and we glided down to Galveston. Not to forget it, I will mention a strange incident. As the steamboat passed opposite the battle field of San Jacinto, the troops on board were formed, facing to the field, and presented arms, the drums beating a march. They remained in that position until they had lost sight of the field. What was their object?

"A little after 12 o'clock p. m., we reached Galveston, remaining in the sun the rest of the day.

"There we passed another unpleasant moment. The company from Kentucky was composed of the most reckless, drunken, and lawless men in the Texan army, and we prisoners were placed under the charge of these lambs. Some of the men began, I do not know why, to fight with their fists, which soon brought about a general melee. They

struck at each other indiscriminately, some seizing their rifles and pistols. Officers interfered, and were soon mingled in the row, giving and receiving blows. Soldiers knew no longer their officers, and a fierce affray raged for some time. The uproar and stamping of feet on the deck attracted the attention of the gentlemen in the cabin below. They came out to ascertain the cause of the difficulty, but the rascals were so hotly engaged in their contest that they did not even mind the voice of their President and other chiefs any more than the barking of dogs. Fearful that the disorder might increase, and, perhaps, end in a tragic manner, we remained motionless. At length, by choking some of them, and by the utmost exertion, the brave Captain Allen succeeded in restoring order.

“General Santa Anna was transferred on board the ‘Independence’ and we were landed at sunset. I was lucky enough to meet Lieutenant Carlos Ocampo, of the Battalion of Jiminez, who gave me a bounteous supply of coffee and hard bread, with which I made up for the last two days’ fasts. For several days our philanthropic benefactors had allowed us but one ounce of food. The citizens, Don Ramon Murgo and Don Gil Hernandez, who had been captured on a Mexican vessel boarded by the Texans, shared the captivity of Lieutenant Ocampo. The bad treatment inflicted by these wretches on that officer can scarcely be conceived. I saw his shoulders covered with stripes and sores, resulting from one hundred lashes laid on him when fastened to a gun.*

“On the 9th the officers were assigned a camping ground—less than fifty square yards—where we remained until the middle of August. Our condition was infinitely worse on that accursed island, because we had no whole-

*Delgado does not tell what they whipped him for. Certainly there was some cause. The others were not whipped.

some water, nor the shelter of shade trees, which we had enjoyed at our former camping grounds. The heat is much more intense on the coast, and, besides, we had to contend with myriads of flies, mosquitoes, and sand-crabs, not to speak of continual storms and showers. Such were the swarms of mosquitoes, that it would seem that the whole species in the world had taken Galveston for a place of rendezvous. The sand-crabs would bite, without, however, being venomous; but they gnawed and destroyed our wretched clothing. The little pests became so tame that large numbers of them lived and slept among us. So many enemies at the same time were too much for us. Within forty days, few among us were still in good health. From 10 o'clock in the morning, the sun darted its rays so intensely upon our tents that they became suffocating, their temperature rising to that of an oven, and forcing us out. We obtained water from holes dug on the bay shore—it was warm, and tasted horribly.

“As to food—so long as the stores of a vessel, robbed by them from our nation, lasted, we fared tolerably well; but these supplies being exhausted, they starved us again.

“The tidings of San Jacinto had spread abroad. Those who received them with the greatest delight were a certain class of vagabonds* and lawless men, burdened with crimes, who hid themselves in the large city of New Orleans. These Gipsies, the refuse of the world, had some scruples in joining the cause of Texas, as congenial as it was to them, for the mere trifling fact that Santa Anna had entered it with 6,000 Mexicans. They had preferred to pause, with due regard to their valuable skins, and await the result. No sooner, however, had they heard of the disaster of the 21st of April, than their patriotism was screwed up to the highest pitch. They be-

*Our readers will take this with a grain of salt.

came louder in their boasts; ran to enlist to fill up the ranks of the Texan rebels, as adventurers, or volunteers, and shipped at once to join the army. Henceforth, shiploads of that hateful rabble came in quick succession from New Orleans. Now they could, without danger, squabble over the league of land, or for the ownership of the land of plenty.[†] As they approached the coast of Galveston, and descried the promised land, Orestes like, they greeted with enthusiasm their beloved new home. Their hurrahs and expressions of joy were interspersed with deep and repeated draughts of their horrid whiskey. All their trust and hope lay now in the dense forests and fertile plains of Texas.

"Such were not our feelings. Whenever the arrival of these new-comers was announced, gloom prevailed in our camp, knowing that we had to expect every kind of impertinence. Every gang of that rabble that came surrounded our camp, most of them being drunk, and thought it becoming to make a display of bravery and patriotism, by pouring upon us a volley of "*Goddams*," and other abusive expressions. Our outward appearance was, unfortunately, quite ridiculous; filthy, lean, unshorn, most of us sick, some in rags, or all but naked, we sought, naturally, to hide ourselves. Not so, however; we were compelled to form in line, in order that nothing might escape the scrutiny, criticism and merriment of our inquisitive visitors, who of course conceived a poor idea of the Mexican people from the samples exhibited before them. Nevertheless, and in spite of the helpless condition in which they saw us, they discussed among themselves the propriety of calling on us at night, for the charitable purpose of murdering us. General Cos, who had received several reports on that subject, sent for the commandant of the

[†]Likely some of this was true.

camp, to acquaint him with the facts, and to request him to protect us by an increase of guards and vigilance.

"There were among the volunteers some men of wealth and education who came to our camp for the only purpose of visiting and being acquainted with the prisoners. These gentlemen were accompanied to our camp by the commandant, who introduced them to us with much regard and formality. After a short conversation, through an interpreter, they took leave of us to call on Don Martin Prefecto de Cos.

"This young and noble Mexican General was our constant companion and good friend in captivity, relieving, by all means in his power, his countrymen, and particularly the sick, giving them clothing, money and other necessities. He met the annoyances of captivity with noble resignation; with his lofty manners and perfect breeding he soothed the ferocious nature of these tigers, causing them to become more tractable and humane with us.* Colonel Morgan, the commandant of our camp, was a harsh and rough man, a violent enemy of the Mexicans. Nevertheless, he became so attached to Cos that he asked of him his portrait, which he showed to all his friends as a particularly valuable gift. Cos evinced such a calm dignity in captivity that twice or three times assassins who had resolved his death desisted from their design upon seeing him, embraced him, and became his friends. Let it not be said that I flatter him, for I have never received any favor from him; therefore my praise should be above suspicion.

"I have said that we remained on Galveston Island until the middle of August.

"On the 16th of that month we slept on board a schooner, the name of which I do not remember, and on the 18th we landed at the town of Anahuac, where we remained

* General Cos was a brother-in-law of General Santa Anna.

up to the 25th. At 4 o'clock p. m. we started for Liberty, ten leagues in the interior of Texas, under the orders of Judge William Hardin, of that locality. On our arrival we camped in Judge Hardin's yard, in a small, shady grove. There we breathed a pure air, enjoyed a milder climate, wholesome water, together with much more comfort and liberty. At length we were free from the rod of that pitiless Morgan and the incessant insults of the volunteer rabble. Soon, however, provisions gave out, notwithstanding the repeated and urgent applications of Hardin to his government, which failed to attend to them.

"It is proper to say, to the honor and credit of Don Francisco Pizarro Martinez, Mexican Consul at New Orleans, that, when we were destitute of food, clothing, and all other necessities, most of us down, struggling with chills and fever—the prevailing disease in that country between the months of October and December, this worthy Mexican sent us a supply of excellent hard bread, sugar, coffee, blankets and a plain suit of clothes for every one of us. I am convinced that nothing but the timely arrival of these gifts saved our lives. Had they been delayed only fifteen days, most of us would have died, as happened to fifteen of our companions who were laid in the grave, from exhaustion, before that supply reached us.

"Judge Hardin relieved our bitter condition by all means in his power, retaining for himself the worst of his houses, in order to appropriate the two others for our sick. Being ill himself, he went, personally, for a physician, medicine, or whatever we needed. He listened to our frequent applications with remarkable patience; granted them if he could; if not, he felt deeply concerned. For the mere form he kept over us two sentinels at night, relieving them in daytime, and allowing some of us to walk about town. In the month of November he built a fine frame house, at his own expense, to shelter us from rain

and cold. After a short time he became very much attached to us, and felt so grieved at our unfortunate condition that he withdrew entirely the small detachment that guarded us, and allowed us the limits of the town. Should some drunken man insult us, he went, or sent some member of his family, to drive him out. Meat and salt were our only rations, and these often gave out. Then, even in the stormiest or coldest days, Hardin would shoulder his rifle and walk out to kill a beef, which he sent, ready butchered, to our quarters. When we were out of rations, which happened not seldom, his good and virtuous wife was kind enough to send us large pieces of seasoned beef, bacon, coffee, sugar, bread, and whatever was placed on her own table. On one occasion she removed from her family beds five or six mattresses, which were placed on the beds of as many of the sick prisoners. Again, on another occasion, she distributed among us half a barrel of hard bread, all that was left for her own use. The butter, potatoes and corn in the house belonged to the prisoners.

"Oh, virtuous family! How great and how many your exertions have been to relieve the despair of our sorrowful and destitute condition! Oh, William Hardin, thy name, and that of thy noble wife, will be imperishable in the hearts of the Mexican prisoners, who, victims of fate, suffered the unexpected disaster of San Jacinto! I vow that, although thou art among the criminal enemies of my beloved country, whether of thy own free will, or because thy destiny so willed it, I will never cease to proclaim and praise thy meritorious and charitable conduct towards us.

"A ball was given by the citizens of Liberty on the 21st of April, 1837, to which all the neighboring families were invited.

"The ball was intended to commemorate the bloody 21st of April, 1836, on which so many illustrious Mexicans were immolated. These people had the effrontery to invite to

that criminal entertainment General Cos, who of course declined. It was told to him by a man of some standing that there were alarming conversations about the Mexican prisoners. This report was not altogether groundless, inasmuch as the gatherings of those besotted people are invariably more or less influenced by mean liquors. In consequence we spent a very uncomfortable night. However, it happened that Bacchus inspired them with gentler feelings. There is no evil that does not work some good. We were told that they deliberated at length upon the question of the prisoners, and that they resolved to send a petition to their government, which was signed even by the ladies, asking it to dispatch us at once or to set us free, as we were eating up their meat and supplies. They added that their destitution was daily increasing, and that they would soon have nothing left for their own families, unless the government granted them prompt relief.

“Hallowed be the hour when this petition was inspired! Its result was that we were set free, which happy news reached us on the memorable 25th day of April, 1837.”

CHAPTER XXI.

CAPT. R. J. CALDER, VETERAN OF SAN JACINTO.

Captain Calder was born in Baltimore, Maryland, on the 17th of July, 1810, and was the son of James H. and Jane E. Calder (nee Miss Caldwell). His father dying when he was very small, young Calder was raised by his paternal uncle, Major James P. Caldwell (a noble and generous man), until he arrived at the age of manhood. From Maryland he, his mother, and Major Caldwell, moved to Kentucky, and from there to Texas in 1832, settling in Brazoria County. Soon after trouble commenced with the Mexican authorities, which culminated in the battle of Velasco in June, 1832. Young Calder, in company with other citizens of Brazoria County, repaired to the scene of action, but arrived too late for the fight; however, they remained on duty there until the final surrender of the fort.

In 1833 his mother died, a true, noble Christian woman. Major Caldwell survived until 1856, dying with yellow fever in Brazoria County, at the house of his step-son, Mordella Monson.

Mr. Calder held various positions in the civil service. In 1835 he was appointed Marshal of the Republic of Texas by President David G. Burnett. The duties of this office were to take charge of wrecks and prizes and execute the laws of Judge Benj. C. Franklin. During this same year he joined the "army of the people" under General Stephen F. Austin, when the Mexicans attacked the Texans at Gonzales and were driven off, and they went back to San Antonio. Captain Calder went with the army to San Antonio

as second lieutenant in the company of Captain J. W. Fannin, John York being first lieutenant. After the battle of Mission Conception Captain Calder came back home and was not at the taking of San Antonio.

When the Mexican army advanced to the conquest of Texas after the fall of the Alamo in March, 1836, Mr. Calder was elected captain of Company K, composed principally of Brazoria County men. He was in all the retreat east, and participated with his men in the battle of San Jacinto, and was the first man, in company with Judge Franklin, to carry the news of the victory to President Burnett. They left the battleground in a skiff, going down the San Jacinto River to the bay. In his company was Anson Jones, afterwards President of the Republic, and Judge Benj. C. Franklin.

Captain Calder was married at Brazoria, Texas, December the 27th, 1836, to Miss Mary W. Douglas, a native of Georgia.

In February, 1837, he was elected sheriff of Brazoria County, which position he held six years, and during that time arrested the famous forger, Monroe Edwards. While acting in the capacity of sheriff, he was taken by a mob and placed in jail in the town of Brazoria to prevent his imprisoning Willis Alston, whom they had determined to kill and did kill as soon as the sheriff was locked up and the prisoner in their possession. They then released the sheriff and apologized to him for their action, saying it was for his good that they did so.

In 1838 he was mayor of Brazoria and from 1844 to 1846 was chief justice and probate judge of Brazoria County. From 1846 to 1858 he lived a quiet, retired life on his farm in Fort Bend County, to which place he had removed in 1846. In 1859 he was mayor of Richmond, and from July, 1866, to April, 1869, he was judge of probate and

chief justice of Fort Bend County, a position from which he was removed by the federal military authorities.

During his residence in Richmond he was engaged in some mercantile business, and practiced law in partnership with his son-in-law, Major W. L. Davidson.

Captain Calder always contended that General Houston was right in his retreats before Santa Anna, and that he fought the battle of San Jacinto from choice and not because he was forced to fight (as some assert), and that he never held a council of war, but acted at all times on his own responsibility.

Captain Calder was a Mason, and Past High Priest of the Chapter. He died at Richmond August the 28th, 1885, aged seventy-five years, one month and nine days. He was buried by the Masonic fraternity, No. 72, A. F. and A. M., officiating, and it was one of the largest funeral processions ever seen in Richmond. Among those present were Thomas J. Smith, Geo. W. Pleasants, Judge Williams, Major Cain and Judge Sullivan, the Rev. Hotchkiss officiating in the ceremonies. Thus was laid to rest the last surviving captain of the twenty-two who led their men to victory on the bloody field of San Jacinto.

A few months after the death of Captain Calder he was followed by his wife, who died at Galveston while on a visit there. Besides two that died in infancy, they had six children—three girls and three boys, who lived to womanhood and manhood. Robert, the eldest, a member of the famous Terry Rangers, was killed in battle during the civil war, and his body was carried from the field on a horse by Mr. Clem Bassett, now of Richmond, Texas. Jane Eliza married W. L. Davidson and lives in Richmond. Jennie W. never married, but is still living. Ann Maria married J. C. Williams, deceased, and she now resides in Galveston. Samuel D. married Lola Lamar, daughter of

General M. B. Lamar. He died at Boerne, Kendall County, but his remains were conveyed to Richmond, Texas, and buried in the cemetery there. His widow now lives in Galveston. James P. married Sallie Weston. He died, and she married Sandy Herndon.

CHAPTER XXII.

RIVERS AND CREEKS OF FORT BEND COUNTY.

Chief among the rivers of the State of Texas is the Brazos, which drains an area of about 35,000 square miles, and is navigable as far as Columbia at all times, a distance up the river of forty miles. It has its source in the north-western part of the State, at the foot of the Staked Plains, and flows in an easterly direction to Baylor County, thence southeasterly to Brazoria County, where it empties into the Gulf of Mexico. It is about 900 miles long, and runs through the whole length of Fort Bend County from north-west to southeast.

The frontage on the Brazos River of Fort Bend County is about seventy-six miles on each side of the river, making a total frontage on said river of one hundred and fifty-two miles. The valley of the Brazos is from three to eight miles in width. The land in this valley is unsurpassed in fertility, and occupies the central portion of the county.

There is an excellent body of prairie land from twelve to eighteen miles in width, with black sandy and chocolate sandy soils, lying between the timbers of the Brazos and San Benard valleys. And again, from five to ten miles east of the Brazos River, and paralleling the Brazos, is a large body of prairie land, extending beyond the north and east lines of the county. Sixty per cent. of prairie is black, hog-wallow land.

Besides the Brazos River, there are other streams and water-ways in the county, chief among which is the San Benard River, with a valley of from one to four miles in

width, and of great fertility, and which forms the western boundary of the county.

Oyster Creek is east of and parallel to the Brazos. The lands on this creek cannot be excelled anywhere. As much as two and one-half bales of cotton or 100 bushels of corn have been raised on one acre.

Big Creek, Clear Creek, Coon Creek, Cottonwood Creek, Cow Creek, Snake Creek, Deer Creek, Turkey Creek, Bee Creek, Mound Creek, Fairchild Creek, Jones Creek, Stafford Creek and Buffalo Bayou are well distributed throughout the county, and have excellent water and draining facilities.

Along the Brazos and all the streams in the county are found most excellent timber, and in great quantities, among which are oak, ash, elm, cottonwood, sycamore, pecan, hackberry, walnut, mulberry, wild peach, holly, box-elder and cedar. Fine ash timber is in abundance in the Brazos and Benard valleys, and immense quantities of cedar posts can be obtained in the valley of the Benard. The surface of the country north of the Brazos River is gently undulating prairie. Stretching away from the south bank of the Brazos is a high, level prairie, covered with the most luxuriant grasses, and green the entire year. Farming and stock-raising is the principal industry.

CHAPTER XXIII.

RAILWAY MILEAGE.

Galveston, Harrisburg & San Antonio Railway	32.50 miles
Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe Railway	38.81 miles
New York, Texas & Mexican Railway	14.80 miles
International & Great Northern Railroad.....	10.30 miles
Missouri, Kansas & Texas Railway.....	64.01 miles
San Antonio & Aransas Pass Railway.....	20.60 miles
Sugarland Railway	14.20 miles
Texas Western Railway	6.25 miles

Estimated Railroad Mileage.....201.47 miles

Western Union Telegraph Company (estimated)	78.50 miles
Southwestern Telegraph & Telephone Company.....	57.00 miles

Estimated Value of Railway, Telegraph, Tele-
phone and Appurtenances..... \$1,000,060

Population, about 22,000

There are about 350 miles of public roads in the county, many of which are graded roads, and in excellent condition.

CHAPTER XXIV.

“OLD WHIP”—THE HORSE THAT SANTA ANNA RODE AT SAN JACINTO.

About 1821 or 1822 a man named Allen Vince came to Texas from Missouri as a part of the colony of Stephen F. Austin and settled above the mouth of a small bayou which empties into the Buffalo Bayou about twenty miles below the present city of Houston. Here he had a grant of land located, erected a house and established a stock ranch. For convenience in passing from one side of the bayou to the other he constructed a narrow, rough, but strong cedar bridge, and Vince's Bayou and Vince's Bridge became famous in Texas history in connection with the battle of San Jacinto. The people in traveling from the east or coming from the west crossed on this famous little bridge and soon a public road led from Lynch's Ferry on the San Jacinto to all points west of Vince's Bayou.

Mr. Vince also opened a farm on the east side of the Brazos River within the present southern limits of Fort Bend County, and raised fine crops of corn. Besides cattle stock at his ranch on the bayou, he also had some good horses, among which was a large coal-black stallion whom he called “Old Whip,” from the fact, I suppose, that he whipped everything else on the ranch in the way of horses. In April, 1836, when Santa Anna arrived at this bayou ranch with his army and the inmates had all fled before him, he had all the horses gathered up for his own use that could be conveniently caught, including “Old Whip,” which the Mexican commander-in-chief appropriated as his own particular war horse, transferring his fine \$300 saddle from the back of an inferior mount to that of the black stal-

lion, and rode away upon him to New Washington on the bay shore, crossing all his men and baggage on the little bridge, except a twelve-pound cannon and caisson wagon of ammunition, which he was afraid would break it down, and which he sent around the head of the bayou in charge of one company of troops, commanded by General Castrillon. General Houston came along soon after with his army and crossed on the same bridge, and after him came General Cos with 500 more Mexican troops, and made the passage there.

Colonel Delgado, who was on the staff of Santa Anna, says, in his notes on the campaign, that after arriving at New Washington and burning a warehouse there and taking possession of other property, the President sent him out with a detachment to bring in some cattle and slaughter them for the use of the army, and so plentiful were they in that country that they soon rounded up 100 head and drove them to camp. Now, these cattle were raised in Fort Bend County and belonged to Dr. Johnson Hunter and had been driven from his ranch on Oyster Creek ahead of the Mexican army, in an effort to save them, but he was finally compelled to abandon them on the San Jacinto prairie on the near approach of the army under Santa Anna. There were about 600 head of them, and this accounts for cattle being so numerous at the time in that part of the country.

When a scout came galloping in and informed Santa Anna that the Texans had also crossed Vince's Bayou and were close upon his rear, it seemed to have alarmed him to an unreasonable extent, considering his military achievements and fame in Mexico. He at once mounted "Old Whip" and dashed back toward the prairie through a narrow lane crowded with pack-mules and soldiers, riding over and knocking them to one side in piles, and shouting at the top of his voice: "The enemy are coming! The

enemy are coming!” This had a tendency to demoralize the Mexican troops, seeing their President in such a “rattled” state, and, instead of making an effort to form and face the enemy, lost all idea of fighting, and only attempted to save themselves by flight, and no order could be restored until a squad of cavalry came in and reported the Texans had gone into camp on Buffalo Bayou. Santa Anna then moved up with his army and encamped, facing the enemy about half a mile south. John R. Fenn, who resides in Fort Bend County and also has a residence in Houston, and who was captured by Almonte’s men at Fort Bend, where Richmond is now, and made his escape on the following morning while the Mexicans were firing at the steamboat “Yellowstone,” which suddenly came swiftly around the bend and ran the gauntlet of the Mexican army, says that he does not wonder at the feat of Santa Anna running over so many pack-mules and infantry soldiers, as he knew “Old Whip” well, and that he was one of the most powerful horses in the country.

On the day of the battle Santa Anna had the famous black horse near him, and when he saw the conflict was going against him, and while the brave Castrillon and Almonte were vainly endeavoring to rally the panic-stricken Mexican troops, he mounted and set out across the prairie toward’s Vince’s Bridge, leaving Captain Henry Karnes and his troopers far behind, who went in pursuit of him. The bridge, however, had been burned by Deaf Smith, and when the fugitive President of Mexico arrived there, he essayed to cross the boggy little bayou, but “Old Whip” stuck fast in the mire, and he was compelled to abandon him and the fine saddle and hide himself in a thicket. Karnes and his men came upon the scene later on and rescued the horse, who was a woeful sight when he came out, his black, glossy, beautiful coat being covered with mud and slime. Santa Anna was captured on the

following day. The horse was well cared for and restored to Vince, who kept him for many years on his ranch, and he died there, and, for a horse, at a very advanced age. He was a magnificent traveler, moving under the saddle like he was on springs.

CHAPTER XXV.

DR. JOHNSON CALHOUN HUNTER.

Dr. Johnson Calhoun Hunter was born in Charleston, South Carolina, on May the 22nd, 1787, and was raised to manhood there, and there married Miss Martha Harbert, who was born in Wythe County, Virginia, near the "Blue Ridge," on August the 29th, 1792. From South Carolina Dr. Hunter moved to Ohio and settled in the town of Circleville and helped to build the first brick house in that place. Here he was interested in the mercantile business, but was not successful, and went from there to Madrid, Missouri, about the time of the great earthquake there. Hearing many reports about Texas he concluded to visit that country, and in about 1820 left his wife and three children, and, in company with about twenty others, went to San Antonio, Texas. Dr. Hunter carried a lot of drugs and medicines with him for sale, but not wishing to remain long left his stock in trade with one of the Vera-mendis to dispose of for him, and returned to his family, having made up his mind to immigrate to Texas. They met him at New Orleans by previous understanding, and, purchasing a schooner there, set out in it for Galveston, coasting around near the shore. He was accompanied by a sailor named Jack, who proved of invaluable service before their journey was over. Half way between Berwick's Bay and Galveston Island they were shipwrecked, and here on an island they remained for some time; they were exposed to all the hardships incident to such unfortunate circumstances. Day after day the doctor skirted around the shore, watching for a sail, and, finally, got

aboard of a small schooner, and leaving his family and "Jack, the Sailor." on the island, made his way to Galveston, purchased another schooner and returned for his family and such things as could be reclaimed from the wrecked schooner, and then made his way to Morgan's Point. Here he settled and was granted land by the Mexican government. This was just before the colonists of Stephen F. Austin came and settled on the Brazos River and other places.

At Morgan's Point Dr. Hunter built a unique house. There being no chance to get lumber, he studied out a very good substitute. First, he cut circles around big cypress trees through the bark at the base and eight or ten feet above and peeled off the bark in large slabs, the width of ordinary plank for a box house. Weights were placed on this bark while it was green to prevent curling and kept in that position until dry. It was then used as boxing same as plank, first setting up four posts in a square, the size he wanted the house, then connecting these at the top with girders. To these the bark slabs were nailed, leaving doors and breaking cracks the same as in constructing a plank box house.

A man named Brown was living with Dr. Hunter, and on one occasion, in the absence of the doctor, he was taken violently sick and died. Mrs. Hunter not being able to bury the unfortunate man, who had no family or relatives near, covered him with a blanket in the corner of the house, where he died on a pallet of quilts, and awaited the return of her husband, but it was four days before he arrived. In the meantime the odor from the dead man became so intolerable that Mrs. Hunter was compelled to evacuate the house and live under a tree with her children. When the doctor returned he and a negro man who had been on the trip with him took up the body with the quilt

on which he lay, and, conveying it a short distance from the house, there dug a deep hole in the sand, deposited the remains, and heaped up a great mound over them. In after years this was a noted place for land corners and bearings, starting from or so many varas from "Brown's grave," and thus expressed in the field notes.

In 1829 Dr. Hunter sold out at Morgan's Point and came to Fort Bend County and was adopted into Austin's colony, but as he had already received his grant of land had to secure more by purchase. He accordingly bought 200 acres out of the Randall Jones survey, for which he paid \$400, and it became the well known "Hunter Plantation" six miles from Richmond in the edge of the prairie on Oyster Creek near its head, but much more land was added afterwards. Dr. Hunter, with the aid of his sons and a negro man, cut large pine trees near the head of Buffalo Bayou, northeast across the prairie about seven miles from his place, and with a whip-saw got out lumber enough to build a roomy and comfortable house. This, of course, took hard labor and consumed considerable time, but it was the best they could do in those days and they appreciated it all the more when it was completed. The sawing was done by scaffolding one man above and the other below the log, the saw working perpendicular up and down. Before the house was completed William Hunter, who now lives in Houston, was born in camp under a tree, on the 13th of July, 1829. Dr. Hunter prospered in his new home, raised fine crops, hogs and cattle, and by the time the Mexican army came in 1836 was getting well fixed and ready to live easy, but Santa Anna ruined all of this for a time, at least. At this time there were seven children—four boys, Robert H., John C., Thomas J., and William; girls, Harriett, Mesina, and Martha. When Dr. Hunter learned from the movements

of the armies that Santa Anna would strike Fort Bend County, he gathered 600 head of cattle and started east with them in an endeavor to save them. All of his family and a negro girl being with him, except the then oldest sons, who went to Houston's army, Thomas doing scout duty. William was only six years of age. The doctor drove the cattle ahead of both armies, intending to cross the San Jacinto River at Lynch's Ferry, but when he arrived there the boat was sunk and the cattle could not be induced to take the water. While in this dilemma the Mexican army appeared on the prairie, going toward New Washington, and the cattle were abandoned and soon scattered all over the country. The family managed to get across the river in a small skiff, the horses were made to swim over, and they continued their flight toward the Sabine, but stopped on Cow Bayou to await developments. On the following day, after the Mexican army appeared, the Texans under General Houston came also and went into camp on the bayou above the ferry. Both armies now slaughtered Dr. Hunter's cattle for food, the Mexicans rounding up about 100 head and carrying them to their camp before the Texans came. After the battle of San Jacinto and return of the settlers, the Hunters found about 300 head of their cattle, and drove them back to Fort Bend. When the doctor abandoned his home he left about 800 bushels of corn in a crib and many big, fat hogs running loose about the place. On his return he expected to find his place in ashes, but this fortunately was not the case, but he soon discovered that a portion of the Mexican army had been there, mostly cavalry, and had fed away all of his corn except a few bushels. They had also killed many hogs and left the place very filthy. They cooked and eat in the house, some of them, and left grease on everything; also one-half of a fat hog was left on the floor of the best

room in the house, used by the family as a sitting room. Extra flooring had been selected for this room, clear of knots, etc.

Doctor Hunter died May the 29th, 1855, and his wife died December the 25th, 1860. Both are buried in the Hunter burying ground, about four hundred yards from the old Hunter residence in a post oak point in the edge of the prairie, known as the "Brick Church" grave yard—named from a brick school house, which was nearby, but long since gone, and which was used for church also.

R. H. Hunter, the eldest son, was in the first fighting at San Antonio in 1835, and was with "Old Ben Milam" when he stormed the city. He died at Flatonía in the spring of 1901 at a very advanced age, being over 90 years old. He married a Miss Beard, and in 1854 moved to Guadalupe County and put up a water mill on the San Geronimo Creek, two miles east of Seguin.

John C. Hunter was killed in the Civil War.

Thomas Jefferson Hunter was born on the 7th day of March, 1821, and died March 30th, 1900.

Thaddeus Warsaw Hunter was born September 30th, 1823, and died in Weimar, Colorado County. His twin sister, Mesina, married Aleck McCloy, of Fort Bend County, in about 1851. She died February 26th, 1853. Her only child, James Franklin McCloy, survives her, and lives in Fort Bend County.

Harriett Hulda, an elder sister of Mesina, was born November 15th, 1818, and married Colonel I. M. Frost, and died May 29th, 1859, leaving a large family of children in Fort Bend County, four now living. Her children were Henry H., J. Miles, and Frank P. and two daughters, Ada and Ella.

Josephine B. Estes, wife of Thomas J. Hunter, was a daughter of J. D. Estes, one of the early settlers of Fort

Bend County. She was born June the 26th, 1823, and died April the 1st, 1881. Their children were Louis, John, Percival, Louise, Robert E. Lee, Eunice, Susan (one died in infancy not named); all of these are dead except Percival, Robert E. Lee, Louise and Eunice.

A generation has passed away, and the Hunter burying ground is full to overflowing. Dr. Hunter came here a young man, comparatively full of hope and energy, and commenced improving a home in this beautiful spot on the edge of the prairie. He succeeded and died with old age. His sons also succeeded, and some of them died with old age. Thus it is in life, one following the footsteps of the other. The large, roomy house of the Hunters has been remodeled, until only a few pieces of the original remain, and the new work is getting old and will pass away like the hand that fashioned it. Of all the Hunters that once lived here and had their joys and sorrows, the old home now has but one occupant, Robt. E. Lee Hunter, unmarried, and who lives here alone and runs the farm. He is the son of Thomas J. Hunter, and at the foot of the elevation on which the house stands is a large pecan tree, which his father planted, and which bears the finest pecans of any tree around here. West of the house, a short distance, is Oyster Creek, a peculiar stream. It heads near here, runs parallel with the Brazos, but keeps clear of it and empties its waters into the Gulf. All other streams near the Brazos go into it somewhere. The writer spent more than a week at the Hunter place, the guest of the genial, hospitable Lee, and enjoyed roaming about the historic place. In front of the east gallery stands an old moss-covered post oak tree, with the marks of many rifle balls upon it. Here the Hunters, in their prime, eyesight unimpaired, with the old-time rifles preparing to take a hunt or to fight Mexicans, would fire at that tree, empty

their guns so that they could clean up and load afresh. Here a portion of the Mexican army and cavalry remained, and fed away nearly 800 bushels of his corn, killed many hogs, cooked and eat fresh pork in the house, and left it in a very filthy condition for the good wife to worry about when she returned from the forced flight.

No doubt there is not a dozen of those Mexican soldiers alive now, of the young, saucy fellows that camped there in 1836.

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE BORDENS.

Gail Borden, Sr., came to Texas in 1828 and settled in Fort Bend County, his league of land being in the famous bend, from which the county takes its name. He and his sons, John P., Thomas, Gail, Jr., and Paschal, took an active part in all of the stirring scenes of their time, not only as pioneers to subdue the wilderness by manual labor until it should blossom as the rose, but helped to pave the way also to that higher civilization which we now enjoy, as soldiers to help fight the battles against all enemies, as statesmen to raise their voices in wise council while the ship of state was being guided to a safe and secure haven. During the Texas revolution of 1836, John P. Borden and his brother, Paschal, belonged to the company of Captain Mosley Baker, and was in the heroic fight made by Baker's men at San Felipe, by which they prevented the Mexican army from crossing there, and forced them to abandon the attempt and make the passage at Fort Bend. Later on the two brothers were in the decisive battle at San Jacinto, John P. as first lieutenant of Captain Baker's company. After the freedom of Texas from Mexican rule was accomplished, John P. Borden took an active part in the affairs of the Republic, and during the administration of President Lamar was appointed land commissioner by him. The President had vetoed a bill establishing a land office, clearly setting forth his objections, but it was made a law over his veto. Lamar then, to show his desire to have the law wisely and faithfully executed, appointed John P. Borden the first commissioner, and conditions

afterwards proved that a more judicious selection could not have been made.

Thomas and Gail Borden were the founders of the *Texas Telegraph*, the first permanent newspaper published in Texas, first making its appearance at San Felipe in 1835, then the press and type were removed to Harrisburg in 1836, on the approach of the Mexican army, and they were there working off a form of the paper when Santa Anna's army appeared at that place and they were forced to abandon the work and flee for their lives. The type and press were thrown into the bayou and the printing office destroyed. After the victory at San Jacinto, the publication of the *Telegraph* was renewed at Columbia, but was with the government transferred to the town of Houston, and soon afterwards the paper was sold to Messrs. Moore and Cruger.

Thomas Borden was a lieutenant in Captain Bird's company in 1835, and commanded the company in the absence of Captain Bird when San Antonio was stormed by the Texans under Colonel Ben Milam and Colonel Francis W. Johnson. He was also the inventor of the steam gauge. He was older than his brother, Gail, and besides being a partner in the publication of the *Telegraph*, was also in charge the survey and sale of lots in Galveston, and died in that city in 1877.

John P. Borden was in the Somerville campaign of 1842 and survived all of the dangers and hardships of frontier life until 1891, dying in that year at an advanced age.

Gail Borden filled a number of civil offices and was a member of the Convention at San Felipe in 1833. He was also the agent for the Galveston City Company, and the first collector of the port of Galveston. After annexation he distinguished himself as an inventor, first securing a valuable patent for preserving meat in a form which he

called "meat biscuit." He also invented and secured a patent for a process of condensing milk, and "Borden's Condensed Milk" is a staple article of commerce. He made the first condensed milk where the town of Glidden is now, in Colorado County, but then called Borden. As late as 1887 his sign was still to be seen, which read: "Borden's Condensed Milk Factory." At that time a post-office and Borden's place was about all there was there. Gail Borden, Sr., died at this place, but in what year the writer does not know. Gail, Jr., died there in January, 1874. The County of Borden, at the foot of the plains, was named for him, as was also the county seat, which is Gail. Paschal Borden married a Miss Stafford, and died at Stafford's Point, on Oyster Creek, in Fort Bend County.

The Bordens were valuable accessions to the colony of Austin, and came from Ohio there. They faithfully did their part in the days that "tried men's souls," and when weighed in the balance of duty and integrity, were not found wanting.

CHAPTER XXVII.

INCIDENT IN FORT BEND COUNTY DURING THE PASSAGE OF THE MEXICANS.

With all of the history that has been written of the pioneer days of Texas and the wars of the early settlers against Mexicans and Indians, yet many incidents remain unrecorded, and will ever remain so. Those connected with them, and the only ones conversant with the facts, have long since passed away and the history lost. The writer, in his researches for Fort Bend County history, came across the following pathetic incident, penned by one who has passed away, yet the facts remain and live, and it is to such men of an inquiring turn of mind who record facts and dates in a manner in which they can be preserved for generations to come, are we indebted for the knowledge which we have of the history of our country. The people of Texas should and do cherish the memory of those men and women who have labored and spent their time and money in order that the deeds of our forefathers and mothers should not be forgotten, and the hardships which they endured for us should ever remain a cherished and green spot in our memories.

While the people of Fort Bend County were fleeing and hiding from the Mexican invaders, unavoidable fate threw a young couple into the deep tangled recesses of a cane brake below Fort Bend on the Brazos River, from whence it was impossible for them to escape, with every path occupied or picketed by the enemy. There in that wild retreat, with wild beasts for neighbors and a negro boy for a companion, their first-born came into the world.

That young father was Francis Menefee White, afterwards a well known Legislator and Commissioner of the General Land Office. His wife was a Miss McNutt, who did not survive many years the remarkable ordeal through which she had passed.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

AUNT LUCY FOSTER—ACCOUNT OF HER LIFE AND DEATH.

We are permitted, by relatives of the deceased, to copy the following from a publication at the time of her death:

"On the 25th of March, 1872, in Fort Bend County, Texas, Mrs. Lucy Foster, wife of Randolph Foster, departed this life at the advanced age of 72 years. Randolph Foster and his wife were among the first settlers in Texas. They immigrated from Mississippi and settled on the Brazos River, prior to most, if not all, of Austin's colonists, with whom they became incorporated, and as such received their quota of land from the Mexican government.

"At that early day they settled on the same spot where the subject of this notice has resided ever since, and where she died, surrounded by a numerous family and a wide circle of friends, all of whom mourn her loss as one whose place can never be filled. The future of Texas can never again fashion characters such as her past gave us. They were moulded by circumstances peculiar to the times that have passed away and can never return.

"'Aunt Lucy' was a marked type of the women of her day in Texas. During all of the trying times and scenes through which she passed, from the date of her settlement in Texas to that of her death, she was ever the same—kind, noble and generous to all. Her purity and goodness were only equalled by the simplicity and unostentatiousness of her manners.

"As wife, mother, neighbor, she was a model. None knew her but to admire the great simplicity and beauty of

her character, and those who knew her longest admired her most.

"But few of the 'Old Three Hundred' now remain among us. Thus, one by one, they are passing away. Long since many names which were conspicuous among the first settlers, have become extinct in Texas, and very soon none of those dear and venerable links that connect the long ago and romantic past of Texas with the stern realities of the present, will be with us. The few that still linger with bowed and whitened heads to contemplate the rich and glorious future of their toil, which others are gathering around them, are justly entitled to every honor and every comfort that is in our power to bestow upon them during the remainder of their days.

"Yes, the present and future people of Texas owe a vast debt of gratitude to the living and the dead of that noble pioneer band. The 'Old Three Hundred,' who, amidst so many hardships, trials and privations, selected this fairest and most genial domain from barbarism and dedicated it to productiveness and civilization, and turned it over to those who should succeed them. What a heritage! What noble disinterestedness! In the great contest for such a prize in common with all the 'Old Three Hundred' 'Aunt Lucy' Foster acted well her part.

"May she rest in peace, and may her memory, with that of all her compeers, be ever-cherished among the brightest jewels that adorn the early history of Texas, who will perform the pleasing task of gathering them all up, and giving them a setting, befitting their brilliancy and richness."

"J. S. S."

"Richmond, April, 1872.

The writer of this history of Fort Bend County hopes that he is the historian who has rescued these incidents and early history of the pioneers of Fort Bend.

We also copy the following from an old print:

DEATH OF RANDOLPH FOSTER.

“Died, on the 18th instant, at the home of Thomas M. Blakely (his son-in-law) in this county, Randolph Foster. Eighty-eight years ago he was born in what is now the State of Mississippi, then a wilderness, but little known to the white man. He was a soldier of the war of 1812, and was a member for a while of the company commanded by Captain Randall Jones, which was employed in holding the Southern Indians in check while the war was raging in the region now comprising the States of Indiana and Ohio. He was in Texas as early as 1817, and his camp was situated but two miles from the spot where he died. His presence here antedated the settlement of Austin’s colony. He knew Aaron Burr, General Wilkinson, General Long, Colonel MaGee, Colonel Kemper, Colonel Ross, David Crockett, Ellis P. Bean, the pirate Lafitte, and others whose shadows flit along the haze of early Texas history, and seem to Texans of the present day as myths of the dreamy past. But ‘Uncle Ran’ was the connecting link between the tradition era and the present time, and authenticated as facts what otherwise might have been deemed fictions of poets and romantists. He was a man of singular simplicity of habits and character, generous hospitality, serene and unostentatious in his piety, and though bold and fearless in disposition, yet the most pathetic soul on earth. An acquaintance of forty-one years with him, during which not a jar or a hard thought can be remembered, justifies the writer in saying that his like we never saw, and may never see again. Death has been busy in our midst, and rapidly from love’s bright circles the gems drop away, and pass to brighter, holier worlds than this. His history should be written by some one with a

cooler brain, a steadier hand, and dryer eyes than belongs to him who pens these lines.

“UNCLE RAN.

“We plead
Teach us thy simple way, unveil the lure
Which waves of doubt and fear around us roll.

“We need
Thy steady grasp upon the helm, thy pious love
To show that thou are not dead, but gone before.”

CHAPTER XXIX.

MRS. JULIA JONES.

Mrs. Julia Jones, daughter of Judge C. C. Dyer, was born in Fort Bend County in 1839. Her father was a native of Tennessee and was born at Dyersburg January 29, 1799, and came to Texas with William Stafford in 1824. In this same year he married Sarah Stafford, who was born February 5, 1809, near Raleigh, North Carolina. Judge Dyer had twelve in family—six boys and six girls. He lived to quite an old age, served as county judge of Fort Bend County, and died in 1864 on his farm on the east side of the Brazos River, opposite Richmond. He had been suffering for some time with heart trouble and fell in the field one morning while taking a walk, and was brought to the house dead by the negro field hands. Mrs. Dyer died in 1874. Their homestead is now known as the Pleasant's place.

William Thomas, eldest son of Judge and Mrs. Dyer, was born in 1825. He married Miss Annie Swenson, who still survives. Her brother, F. M. Swenson, lived in Fort Bend County prior to the Civil War, but removed to New York and became a prominent banker there. William Dyer died at Round Rock, Texas, February 25, 1903, at the advanced age of 87 years.

James Foster Dyer was born in 1827 and in 1852 married Miss Sarah Catherine Barnett, daughter of Thomas and Nancy Barnett. Their children were John, Clara, Mary and Lottie. The last named is the only one living and is the wife of John M. Moore.

Harvey Franklin Dyer was born September 26, 1830, and died young.

John Eli was born July 11, 1832, and married first Miss Little, of Alabama, and second Miss Heard, of Eastern Texas, in Liberty County. Children by his first wife was one son, Thomas, and eleven by second marriage.

Sarah was born August 23rd, 1835, and married Henry Gray Little, of Alabama. Their children were Bettie, Katie and Herbert.

Mary was born June 3rd, 1837, and died in infancy.

Julia, born April 15th, 1839, and married Austin Jones, son of Captain Randall Jones; one child, died in infancy. Husband died in 1889. She still survives and lives in Richmond.

Josephine, born December 29, 1841, and married Thomas Richardson, of Florida, in 1861. Their children were: Thomas, Stafford, Effie, Benita and Florence. They went to Mexico in 1866, and Benita was born there.

Martha, born 22nd of June, 1843, and died in infancy.

Pembroke, born 22nd of June, 1846, and married Miss Ida Thompson, daughter of Isam Thompson, of Matagorda County, Texas. Their children were Sallie, Velma and Pembroke—all now living in Houston.

DeWitt Clinton Dyer, born 16th of August, 1848.

Florence, born April 26, 1853. She married August Meyer, and died, leaving four children: Leon, Clement, Vernon, and Lottie. The last named married Ed. Winston, great grandson of Mrs. Jane Long. These children were raised by Mrs. Julia Jones, of Richmond.

CHAPTER XXX.

THE SHIPMANS AND MORTONS.

Moses Shipman, one of the colonists of Stephen F. Austin, was a native of North Carolina, and married Mary Robinson, daughter of John Robinson, of South Carolina, on the 19th day of January, 1798. Their first son died in infancy, and their second son, Daniel, was born on the 20th of January, 1801. After these were four sons and four daughters, to-wit:

Edward, born in Tennessee, March 1st, 1803.

Mary, born in North Carolina, September 28th, 1805.

John M., born in North Carolina, March 17th, 1808.

Christina, born in South Carolina, August 23rd, 1810.

James R., born in South Carolina, April 8th, 1813.

Moses, Jr., born in Tennessee, January 16th, 1816.

Elizabeth, born in Missouri, February 3rd, 1819.

Lucetta, born in Arkansas, December 28th, 1821.

In 1814, on the 5th day of March, the Shipmans left South Carolina and went to North Carolina and stopped in Buncombe County until fall, intending to start again in November, but rented a farm on the French Broad River and made a crop.

In the fall they sold their crop and started to Tennessee, and, after a weary trip all the way in wagons, Mr. Shipman bought a tract of land on Bradley's Creek in Franklin County, Tennessee, and there built a house, rented a field and made a crop.

Next year the oldest boys put in twelve acres on their own land, and then again rented the same farm as the previous year. Now, at this time, a relation of the Shipmans named James Burleson and his two sons, Edward

and Joseph, lived near the Tennessee River, opposite the Cherokee Nation. These Indians had large farms of rich land, and the Burlesons and Robert Thrasher, son-in-law of James Burleson, crossed over there and rented a fine body of land from the Indians and made a good and large crop. In the fall a difficulty occurred between the Indians and Burlesons in regard to a settlement about the crop, which culminated in a general fight. The Indians outnumbered the whites, and were about to get the best of them, when Ed. Burleson killed two of the Indians with a pair of holster pistols, which gave them a chance to get clear of the Indians and make their escape. This young Ed. Burleson was afterwards the famous General Ed. Burleson of Texas.

After this difficulty Ed. and Joe Burleson came to the house of Moses Shipman, in Franklin County, and persuaded him to go with them to Howard County, Missouri. He started on the 16th of October, but stopped in Illinois, and the Burlesons went on. Shipman made a crop on Schoal Creek, Ill., and then moved on again and arrived at the Burlesons in Howard County, Mo., in November, 1817, and remained there two years. Moved then to Richland Creek, Mo., made two good crops, and was getting comfortably fixed, when an old friend, Reuben Gage, prevailed on Shipman to move with him to Arkansas, which he did, but did not remain there long, as they began to hear of Texas and the fine inducements there for settlers to take up land. They now turned their wagons towards Texas, and crossed Red River, opposite Jonesboro, on the 19th of March, 1822. Near here Moses Shipman settled, but his son, Daniel, and a young man named George Nid-ever, who came with them, wanted to look at the country further west, and soon set out on ponies for the Brazos country. They came by way of Nacogdoches and crossed the Trinity River at a ford two miles below Robbin's

Ferry, and crossed the Brazos River at Robinson's Ferry, or near it; rather, for as the river was low, they forded it. This was near where the town of Washington was afterwards built, and where the Texas Declaration of Independence was signed. From here the boys went to the house of Martin Varner, about two miles west of the present town of Independence, arriving there the 8th day of April, 1822.

From Varner's Shipman and his companion went back to the family on Red River and told them all about the grants of land and Austin's colony, which had been explained to them by Varner.

Moses Shipman was well pleased with their report, and it was decided for all to go to the Brazos in the fall, but when that time came they were all sick, and did not get off until the following fall.

They struck the Brazos at Robinson's Ferry, and then went to Varner's place, and here the elder Shipman bought some improvements and planted a crop. After this he went to San Felipe to see General Austin and made a contract with him for a labor of land in the neighborhood of San Felipe, in the forks of the Brazos River and Mill Creek, in what is now Austin County. They moved to the new home in 1824, and went to work on the west bank of the river in a dense cane brake and cleared up a small farm as late as it was and made some corn, fine turnips and many other vegetables. Their league was taken later, on Oyster Creek, east side of the Brazos near the lower side of Fort Bend County, about twenty miles below Richmond. On the labor they built comfortable log houses, and here a Baptist preacher named Joseph Bays preached a sermon, probably the first west of the Brazos River.

About this time the Craunkaway Indians were troublesome on the lower Brazos and Colorado, and Colonel Austin ordered a company to be raised and march against

them. Amos Ralls was the captain, and Moses Shipman and his son, Daniel, belonged to the company. They started with the command from San Felipe about July, 1825. At the 8-mile point Moses Shipman was taken sick and returned home. The balance went on to Buckner's Spring in the edge of the Colorado bottom, and spies sent from there to the head of "Bay Prairie" on "Old Caney" to look out for the Indians. After various scouting, and finding no fresh sign of Indians, they learned that Captain Randall Jones had fought the Indians and had three men killed, but that the Indians had left the country. Captain Ralls and his men now returned home, and went later with General Austin to hunt for the hostiles. They were located near the town of Goliad, then called La Bahia, but they, through some Mexicans, made a treaty with Austin, and the men, about 75 in number, again returned. Daniel Shipman was in this expedition, a member of Captain Horatio Chriesman's company.

On one occasion Daniel Shipman and a man named Potter were out prospecting toward the Sabine and camped about dark in a grove of timber. They carried no fire-arms, as all the Indians in that part of the country professed to be friendly. A large Indian came to their camp and stated that he wanted something to eat and to remain with them until morning. Apprehending no danger, they consented to this, but some time during the night he attempted to kill both of them with a club. He struck Potter first, who remained unconscious without waking, and then went to where young Shipman was sleeping near his horse and struck him a blow on the head, but the end of the club struck the ground, deadening the force, and, instead of killing the boy or rendering him insensible, he called loudly on Potter to come to his assistance. These calls aroused Potter and he sprang up at once and bounded toward him, and the Indian ran away and was seen no

more. Both boy and man were covered with blood, and, fearing other Indians would come, they at once saddled their horses, and, rapidly leaving the spot, succeeded in getting home, with badly swollen heads. Evidently the object of the Indian was to knock them insensible or kill them and then get their horses and equipage.

In time the Shipmans moved to their league and opened up a good farm and raised an abundance of everything they planted. Game was in great plenty, in fact there were so many bears, panthers and leopards that many hogs were killed by them, but the Shipman boys killed many of them also.

On the 23rd of September, 1828, Daniel Shipman married Miss Margarette Kelley and settled on the bank of "Oyster Creek," and built a nice and comfortable home.

In 1832, when the Mexican authorities cast William B. Travis, Patrick Jack and Monroe Edwards into prison at Anahuac, two companies were raised in Austin's colony to repair to the scene, and in conjunction with settlers from other places to demand justice, Daniel Shipman was in the company of Captain Frank W. Johnson, and remained in the service until the prisoners were released, after some fighting.

Daniel was also at the taking of San Antonio in 1835, in Captain Bird's company, of which Thomas P. Borden was lieutenant, and commanded the company in the absence of Captain Bird.

John Shipman, as has already been stated, belonged to Captain Wiley Martin's company at Fort Bend, and also was in the unfortunate Mier expedition, in which he lost his life.

John V. Morton was born in Nashville, Tennessee, and married Elizabeth Shipman December 22nd, 1836, and died February 7th, 1843. His father, William Morton, died in May, 1833. John Morton was in the battle of San

Jacinto. He left three children—Mary Ann Morton, born January 16th, 1838. Louisa Jane Morton, born September 11th, 1839. John S. Morton, born December 7th, 1841.

Mary Ann died August 24th, 1852. Louisa died July 27th, 1843. John S. was killed by being thrown from a horse July 10th, 1848. John V. Morton's wife survived him, and married S. B. Glasscock at Richmond in 1849, and she died at Houston in April, 1883. Two children of this marriage survived her—Hillery R. Glasscock and Sarah Martha Glasscock; the latter married W. A. Gray, of "Buffalo Gap," Taylor County, Texas, in 1881.

The children of Moses Shipman were Daniel, Edward, Christena, John M., J. R. Lucetta, Moses G., and Elizabeth.

Daniel and James Shipman, brothers, were in the fight at San Antonio in 1835, Daniel being near Colonel Ben Milam when he was killed.

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE MIER EXPEDITION.

In giving this account of the Mier expedition, I do so on account of the Fort Bend County men that participated in it. My readers will also bear in mind that in pronouncing Spanish names and words that i has the sound of e and e has the sound of a, etc. Mier pronounced Meer, Seco pronounced Saco, and so on.

The cause of the famous MIER expedition, as it was called, on account of the Texans being captured at that town in Mexico, was in retaliation for the invasion of Texas by General Wall or Woll in 1842, when he captured San Antonio and carried quite a number of the citizens of that place prisoners to Mexico; and, although a force of Texans had hastily collected under General Caldwell and defeated the Mexicans at Salado Creek and drove them back to Mexico, still they were not satisfied and were anxious to invade the Mexican country and fight them there also.

An expedition was gotten up, sanctioned by President Houston, who ordered out two regiments of militia or volunteers, as we might say, for the invasion of Mexico. One of these regiments was to be raised in Montgomery County, which then embraced what now constitutes Grimes and Walker Counties, and the other was to come from Washington County. The first regiment was commanded by Colonel Joseph L. Bennett, who distinguished himself as a soldier at San Jacinto. The second regiment was commanded by Colonel Jesse B. McCrocklin, and the whole under General Alexander Somerville, also a veteran of San Jacinto. The raising of the different companies

was not confined to the counties named, but were enlisted in various places, and among these volunteers were many who participated at San Jacinto, and others were noted Indian fighters from the west, and, take it all together, no better set of fighting men could have been enrolled in any country than those who marched with Somerville for the invasion of Mexico in the winter of 1842.

The starting point was from San Antonio, where a camp was located until all arrived and the captains reported for duty. Of these were Captain William Ryon, of Fort Bend County; Captain John O. Smith, of Houston (he was left sick at Gonzales, and the command devolved on Lieutenant Thomas S. Lubbock); Captain Bartlett Simms, of Bastrop; Captain William M. Eastland, of Fayette; Captain Ewing Cameron, of the "Cow Boys" from down on the San Antonio River; Captain John G. Pierson, of Robertson County; Captain Clark L. Owen, of Jackson County; Captain Isaac N. Mitchell, of Lavaca County; Captain Shelby McNeil, of Brazoria County. Captains from other places: Jerome B. Robertson, E. S. C. Robertson, Phillip Coe, Wm. S. Fisher, Samuel Bogart, Jack Hays (spy company), James R. Cook, Geo. T. Howard, David Murfree, P. H. Bell, afterwards Governor of Texas, and _____ Houghton.

On the 22nd day of November, 1842, the command left San Antonio for Mexico. There were 700 men, 200 pack-mules and 300 beeves for the use of the troops. The command embraced several preachers, many church members, and many young farmer boys from East Texas. Flaco, the Lipan chief, and a few of his tribe, and one Apache Indian, accompanied the expedition. These were ahead with the spy company of Captain Jack Hays, nearly all of whom were old Texas Rangers. After crossing the swollen Nueces River, Flaco was sent back by Hays with a note to the commander, informing him that he had cap-

tured two Mexican scouts, who reported that two companies of Mexican troops were at Laredo and might be captured. One of these Mexicans, however, made his escape and carried the news of the approach of a body of Texans to the troops at Laredo and they made their escape.

The weather was very cold and the Texans suffered greatly and expected their commander to make a requisition on the town for provisions, blankets, etc. This was done, but very little was obtained, not more than enough to feed the men one day. All, or nearly so, wanted to cross the river at once and have a battle, but instead the men were marched three miles below and encamped on a high bluff. Things went on in this way for several days, and, some of the men becoming much dissatisfied at the turn affairs were taking, finally 200 of them broke away and returned home. The remaining 500 bore down the country until they came to the mouth of the Salado River at the Carizio village. This was a clear, cold day, the 14th of December. Here the Rio Grande River was crossed by means of flat boats. General Canales came in sight with about 700 men, but showed no disposition to attack the Texans. The command camped here and had plenty to eat of kids and mutton found in abundance around the deserted village. The command now moved upon the town of Guerrero, six miles distant, and made a demand for supplies. A very small amount was furnished; a cold wind blew from the mountains, and on the 15th the command was moved back across the river. On the 19th an order was read for the command to prepare to return home, as the expedition was off. Three hundred men refused to obey, but the others did break camp and move off. Those who remained organized again into companies under Captains Ewing Cameron, Wm. M. Eastland, J. G. Pierson, Wm. N. Ryon, Claudius Buster, John R. Baker,

C. R. Reese, and Wm. S. Fisher. It will be noticed that most of these were the original captains, and many of their commands had remained with them. Jack Hays, the McCullochs, Tom Green and others of the Rangers remained a few days doing scout duty, and then returned to San Antonio, deeming the force which remained too small to accomplish anything.

After the separation of the command, those that remained continued their march down the river, and on the 21st of December encamped opposite the town of Mier. Ominous name! How the hearts of the readers of Texas history now thrill at the mention of it! Then it had no significance. The town of Mier was six miles from the camp of the Texans, and on the following morning they crossed the Rio Grande marched to the town and made a requisition on the alcalde for provisions and clothing. He promised that the articles should be delivered next day at the river, but below the camp of the Texans. The latter, however, when they returned to camp brought the alcalde along with them as security for the delivery of the goods. On the 23rd they moved their camp opposite the place where the goods were to be delivered, but the day passed off, and the next, and still the articles did not come. The Texan spies, who had been kept on the west side of the river on the morning of the 24th, captured a Mexican, who reported that General Ampudia had arrived in Mier with troops and prevented the fulfillment of the alcalde's promise. The Texans then determined to again cross the river and give them battle. By 4 o'clock in the evening all had crossed (except forty-one men who were left as camp guards) and were on their march to the town. Captain Baker was in advance with a spy company, and first met the Mexicans who were coming out to fight the Texans. Ampudia, however, retreated, and at dark again entered

the town. The Texans advanced to the Alcantra Creek east of the town and halted for some time. This little stream ran very rapidly and it was difficult to find a crossing. They finally succeeded in getting over, but by this time a lively fight had commenced between Captain Baker and the Mexican cavalry, in which five of the Texans were cut off and captured. Among these were Sam Walker (famous Ranger under Hays), Dr. Sinnickson, Beasley and "Legs Lewis." Others had narrow escapes. It was a hand to hand fight, and the Texans who were cut off abandoned their horses and ran across fences and ditches. Walker was caught by a powerful Mexican and held down while others tied him. A man named McMullens was caught by the legs while getting over a fence, but his boots pulled off and he made his escape. The Texans had emptied their guns and pistols in the fight and had no time to reload. Big Foot Wallace advanced to the edge of the town, but seeing a large body of Mexican cavalry coming out, came galloping back, passed "Legs Lewis" and yelled out to him, "You had better run, the Mexicans will get you sure."

After the main body of the Texans had crossed the creek they advanced into the town, and passed down a street leading into the public square, where the Mexicans had planted cannon. They were now fired on, and a man named Jones was killed. He was a well dressed man, wore a great deal of jewelry, carried a gold watch, and the Mexicans made a rush to secure his body. Here a bloody fight took place, in which about twenty Mexicans were killed, and they were forced back into the houses and cross streets.

When the Texans arrived at a point near the cannon, they received a discharge of grape-shot which swept the street and compelled them to take shelter behind the buildings. It was now dark, Christmas Eve, 1842. The only

chance for the Texans to advance was to open passages through the adobe buildings, and thus work their way to the cannon. Their horses had been left at the creek with a guard. All night they worked through the buildings, opening breaches with pick and crow-bar, and when daylight came they were within fifty yards of the cannon. While engaged in the work during the night, Big Foot Wallace found a Mexican baby which had been abandoned during the hasty exit of the occupants of the house on the approach of the Texans. Wallace told the writer that "The little devil squalled like a panther" when they dug into the room where it was, and Big Foot took it up and advancing to a wall which enclosed a yard, called out in Spanish for some one to come and get the *muchacho*, reached up and dropped it over. A woman's voice was heard on the outside, and no doubt it was taken care of.

At daylight port holes were opened in the various rooms where the captains had posted their men, and a lively cracking of rifles commenced at the artillerymen in the square, and they were compelled to abandon them and stay away, for it was death to go near them.

During the day three desperate attempts to storm and carry the position of the Texans were made, but each charge was repulsed with great loss to the enemy. The bravest of these assaulting parties were the "*Presidio Ales*" (town guards). They wore black hats with white bands around them, and nearly all of them were killed. In one of the rooms occupied by a portion of the Texans a strong Mexican drink called "*Aguadente*" was found, and the men commenced drinking it to excess, even one of the officers imbibing so freely that he became intoxicated and fell to the floor, and while in that condition was hit by a bullet. The Mexicans were firing all the time, and very often a bullet would come through a port hole, the roof,

or through some crack, and strike a man down, either killing or severely wounding him. Big Foot Wallace, although he liked whiskey himself, saw what the end would be if the men kept on drinking, and promptly poured the balance of the "fire-water," as the Indians call it, out on the floor. One of the men, Joe Berry, in coming into town the evening before, as it was getting dark, fell down an embankment and broke his leg. His brother, Bates Berry, and some others bore him to a vacant house in the outskirts of the town, and remained there with him. During the battle on the following day they were discovered by the Mexicans and attacked. They made a rush to reach the position of their comrades, but all were killed except Bates Berry, and he only left his crippled brother at the earnest request of the latter, who thought the Mexicans would spare him and take him prisoner. This, however, was not the case. A Mexican lieutenant named Algerette, who was in command of the assaulting party, killed Berry with his sword as he lay helpless on the floor. One of the men killed here was a bugler named Austin.

The battle raged all day, the Mexicans occupying house-tops and gutters, and shielding themselves as best they could from the deadly rifle fire of the Texans. Many of those killed were shot in the head. When it was no longer possible for them to go near their cannons, they attempted to rope them from around corners, and did succeed in dragging some of them away in this manner. The battle lasted through the night with constantly sounding bugles, and it was thought that Ampudia was being reinforced. The Texans, however, were undismayed, and continued to load and fire as opportunity offered, and repelled several more charges. Great confusion prevailed among the Mexicans. They uttered cries and curses of rage and pain, amidst a constant blast of bugles.

During the fight after daylight on the 26th, the small guard which had been left on the east side of the Alcantra Creek crossed and attacked about sixty of the Mexican cavalry and routed them, but seeing a reinforcement coming, made a desperate attempt to reach their comrades in the town. Out of the nine men who made this attempt, two succeeded, four were killed, and three captured.

During the first close assaults many were killed and wounded on both sides; Colonel Fisher himself, who had been elected to the command, was severely wounded. Captain Cameron had fortified himself and men in the rear of the building occupied by Colonel Fisher and the men with him, and had been exposed to a heavy fire, during which he had three men killed and seven wounded. After some slack in the firing the bugles began to sound another charge, and Cameron hastily left his position and entered that of Fisher, and asked for reinforcements to help to defend his position. About this time, however, a white flag was brought out by Dr. Sinnickson, one of the Texans who had been captured, as before stated. He was ordered to do so by General Ampudia, and also to tell the Texans that he had 1700 troops in the town, and 300 more on the road from Monterey, and that it would be useless for them to continue to resist, but if they surrendered would be treated as prisoners of war; if not, no quarter would be given them. The prospect for the Texans was gloomy, and although they had fought as men worthy the name of Texans, and had caused the streets of Mier to almost run with blood, yet they saw no chance to win. They were on foreign soil, hemmed in on all sides by their enemies, their number reduced, ammunition failing, and the men almost worn out. Some, however, were not in favor of a surrender, and thought they could make a run from their barricaded positions and fight their way out

of the town and back to their other men on the river. This would have been easy compared to what they did attempt later on without any guns at all. Many among Fisher's men and those of the other captains were in favor of a surrender, and a consultation was held. Cameron now left the place, and, hurrying back, urged his men to continue the fight. The majority favored a surrender, and soon men from the various positions, which they occupied during the battle, were seen leaving and giving up their guns in the street. When Fisher's men commenced going out Big Foot Wallace, who had been with them, left and ran to the position of Cameron. Others now also left their commands and came to Cameron, until about fifty stood around him asking him to take command and continue the battle, or make a rush and fight their way out.

At this time great confusion prevailed; some were surrendering and others firing. Cameron held his position until all the balance had surrendered, and, seeing that all hope was gone, said to his men who, with stern but anxious faces, stood around him: "Boys, it is no use for us to continue the fight; they are all gone but us." The men stood for a few moments looking through the port holes at the hordes of Mexicans who were now making a grand display, the cavalry charging up and down the streets and others carrying away the guns of the Texans, while some were entering the various rooms where they fought, and bringing out the dead and wounded. The captured Texans were herded together on the plaza, and the citizens of the town filled the streets, coming to look at them, and the cries of many women were heard lamenting the dead, while others cheered for victory. Thus were the closing scenes of the battle of Mier, when Cameron's men slowly filed out from their barricade in signal of their surrender. Thomas J. Green, a gallant soldier, broke his

sword, as did also Cameron his rifle, instead of surrendering them. Wallace was opposed to a surrender up to the last moment. His brother, Samuel, and other relatives had met death after a surrender at Goliad, and he told the men that would be their fate as soon as they gave up their guns. The brave Cameron, however, wishing to save the lives of his men, took the lead and they followed. In the streets they were met by a strong detachment of the enemy, and the painful task of handing over their rifles, pistols and knives was consummated.

As the captured Texans were marched to the plaza their shoes were stained with the blood of slaughtered Mexicans. The house tops and the gutters were also dripping with blood.

The Mexican loss in the battle, considering the numbers engaged, was fearful. Their own report was 500 killed out of 2,000. Their wounded probably was not half so many, as the Texans fired at close range and with deadly effect. Forty Mexican artillerymen were killed before they would abandon their guns. The Texans had 260 men in the town, 16 of whom were killed and 30 wounded.

In the public square, when the prisoners were carried there and halted, they saw four rows of dead Mexicans reaching across it, and the priests of the town were among them saying mass for the repose of their souls. While this was being done the bodies of the slain Texans, stripped of their clothing, were being dragged through the streets by the cavalry, and followed by yelling Mexicans of all sizes and ages.

During the last days of December Ampudia set out with his prisoners for the City of Mexico, leaving the wounded Texans at Mier in charge of Dr. Sinnickson.

On January the 10th, 1843, the captive Texans arrived at Matamoras, and on the 14th set out from that place for

Monterey, guarded by a troop of cavalry. On the march it was one grand jubilee for the Mexicans. They starved the prisoners and made them travel on foot all the distance, until their shoes were worn out and they were thin and haggard.

The enemy made grand demonstrations in passing through the towns, their approach being heralded by bugle blasts and charging cavalry.

The Texans were marched through the streets, followed by yelling mobs of men and boys. The Mexican women, with but few exceptions, pitied the half starved Americans, and when they arrived at Monterey brought food and fed them.

They stayed here from the 18th to the 22nd and then started to Saltillo. At this place they found six of the Texans who had been captured at San Antonio in September of the year before when Wall captured that place.

At Saltillo Colonel Barragan took charge of the prisoners and proceeded with them to the village of Salado, 100 miles further on, where they arrived on the 10th of February, and were there placed in prison.

For some time the Texans had contemplated making an attempt to escape, and had formulated a plan at Monterey; but the plot was discovered by the Mexicans, and they bided their time for another opportunity. It was now set on foot again, and, without detection, carried out. There had been an addition to the Mier prisoners by a few of the Santa Fe prisoners, among whom was Dr. Richard Brenham and Patrick Lyons, both of whom were anxious to make the attempt to escape. The plan was, that when the prison door was opened early in the morning, Cameron was to give the signal, by throwing up his hat, and a rush was to be made on the guards stationed there, disarm

them, and then charge the main body in the enclosed yard, where the guns and ammunition were kept.

When all was ready and the prison door swung back, in order to pass in the scant meal for the captives, Cameron gave the signal, and he, Lyons, Brenham and Samuel H. Walker, led the charge and succeeded in disarming the guards there, and then, still leading the way, charged the main body, followed by the Texans who swarmed from the prison house and bravely followed their fearless leaders. This was at sunrise on the 11th day of February, 1843. As soon as the first charge was made and the guards disarmed at the prison door, the Texans rushed into the outer court of the building, where 150 infantrymen were guarding the arms and cartridge boxes. Without hesitating an instant they rushed upon the Mexican soldiers with their naked hands, and a most desperate struggle commenced for the possession of the guns and ammunition. Where, in all the world's history, will we find deeds recorded of braver men than those who, on that February morning, in the prison yard of Salado, rushed, empty-handed, on regular soldiers, faced the leveled muskets with unflinching eye, received their fire, and then closed in with them, grappling bayonets and wrenching guns from their hands. This body of infantry were soon put to flight, many of them being disarmed and captured; but the Texans were not yet masters of the situation. Another company of infantry was stationed at the gate, and a force of cavalry outside. Again, without hesitating, the desperate men rushed on these at the gate. Lieutenant Barragan, a brave young officer and son of the commander, held this position, and a most desperate fight ensued. Most of the Texans at this time had guns with bayonets on them, but the soldiers here under Barragan fought better than the others. In vain, however, they tried to keep the Texans from going

through the gate which would give them their liberty. The noise and confusion was fearful. The Mexicans uttered yells, curses, screams of terror and surprise, mingled with clashing bayonets, sabres and musket shots.

Big Foot Wallace charged a Mexican and tried to secure his gun in the first fight, but the fellow made a vicious thrust at the big Texan with his bayonet, which Wallace caught, and a struggle commenced for the mastery, and finally the bayonet came off in the hands of Big Foot, and at this time another Texan who had no gun came behind the Mexican and seized the gun by the breech and pulled it away from him. The Mexican then fell to his knees, threw up his hands, and in Spanish asked for mercy, which was granted him.

The cavalry outside became terror stricken and fled, and the infantry at the gate began to throw down their arms and call for quarter, but for a while no stop could be put to the slaughter. Finally the voice of Cameron was heard among them, pleading for the lives of the disarmed guards, and the maddened Texans desisted, for all loved the brave, unselfish Cameron.

Many Mexicans lay dead and wounded on every side, some moaning with broken heads and gunshot wounds. Lieutenant Barragan displayed great bravery, and when his men were defeated and himself hemmed, with his back to a wall successfully parried several bayonet thrusts with his sabre, and refused to surrender except to an officer. Some one called for a loaded gun to shoot him, but Big Foot Wallace said, "No, a brave man like him deserves to live." Barragan now in his dire distress called for Captain Cameron, who soon came, and the sword was delivered to him. Colonel Barragan had run away with the cavalry and left his son to fight the battle at the gate. Some of the Mexican prisoners said the lieutenant did

not get his bravery from his father, but the mother, and that he looked like her.

Five Texans lay dead and many more were wounded. Among the dead were the gallant Lyons and Brenham, who helped to lead the charge at the prison door. The town of Brenham, Texas, was named for the brave young doctor, who lost his life on this occasion.

At the time of the fight some of the Texans who were sick were confined to themselves in an outhouse under guard, but when the battle commenced these guards ran away. One of the sick men was a Fort Bend County man named Benjamin Boone. He heard the fight, and was satisfied his comrades were making a break for liberty, and awaited anxiously further developments. Soon Captain Baker came into the room, bleeding profusely from a bayonet wound, and lay down by the side of Boone and told him the prisoners had gained their liberty and were preparing to start for Texas. Although sick and weak, Mr. Boone determined to go with them, and bidding Captain Baker farewell, who was too badly hurt to travel, he left the house and joined the others. The Texans now being masters of the situation, dictated terms to the Mexicans, one of which was that their wounded should be taken care of. On these conditions the Mexican prisoners were turned loose, and those of the Texans who were able to do so prepared for instant flight. This was their only chance for safety, for they knew that soon a strong force would be upon them. One thing which was going to be sadly against them in traversing this strange country was the unfortunate and sorrowful fact that two of the men who were to have acted as guides, who had been in this part of Mexico before and knew the country, were killed in the battle.

Some of the Mexican cavalrymen who were not mounted

at the time of the fight ran off and left their horses, and they fell into the hands of the Texans. With these and others found in the town, all were mounted and ready to leave by 10 o'clock a. m., and they hastily departed toward the Rio Grande.

Now, kind reader, if you have tears to shed, prepare to shed them now. Ere long we will see these gallant men back again, starved, emaciated, and in chains, drawing beans for their lives.

By midnight the Texans were fifty miles from the scene of their battle, and a short halt was made, and the horses fed. Twelve miles more were made, and they halted again and slept two hours. Early next morning they left the main road so as to go around the city of Saltillo. On the 13th they struck the road leading from Saltillo to Monclova, but on the next night abandoned it and took to the mountains on the left. This was a fatal mistake, as events which followed will show. The hardships which these brave men had now to undergo were almost beyond human endurance. When too late they saw the mistake which they had made. The country was a barren waste of mountains, without water or anything which they could utilize for food. Six days were spent in trying to get through. The men were perishing with thirst and starvation. Horses were killed and eaten and their blood drank by the famishing Texans. Big Foot Wallace had taken a fat dun pacing mule which belonged to Captain Aroyo at Salado, and he now killed him and he and others ate of the meat and drank the blood, quaffing cupfuls of the red fluid with an apparent relish, as if drinking to one another's health.

People sitting around their pleasant firesides, surrounded by home comforts, when they read this can hardly realize the gravity and horror of the situation, and mayhap

turn from it with disgust and loathing. But can you imagine and picture the scene in its true light? The dry and lonely canyon where the horses were killed and eaten, and their blood drank to sustain human life; this bloody feast akin to savage orgies? Think of the days of hunger and thirst, coupled with toilsome, anxious flight. The dry, parched skin and sunken eyes denoting hunger and thirst. All moisture disappearing from the body, and the stomach consuming itself. Under these conditions men will eat anything, drink anything. None but those who have passed through it can realize all that it means.

The Texans could not long remain in this place, where a portion of the horses were killed. Mexican cavalry were on their trail with pack-mules, carrying food and water. Leaving the remains of the slaughtered horses for the buzzards and coyotes to finish, the Texans once more plunged into the dark mountains in the vain endeavor to reach the Rio Grande, many of them on foot, and all of them soon, for the poor horses also failed and died of thirst. They were hopelessly lost, and soon again thirst began to torment them. They could no longer keep together as a body entire. Some became delirious and wandered away to die in some lonely canyon or amid the rocks of the mountain side. Many would drop down with their heads on their chests and their feet pointing the way they wished to go. Guns were dropped and abandoned here and there.

We can hardly begin to tell all that they suffered, but will say that finally the Mexican cavalry who were on their trail began to come upon those who had fallen by the wayside, and to capture them. The main body, who still had some guns when they were overtaken, refused to surrender unless they could do so as prisoners of war. It was a strange sight, this small force of half dead men, with hollow eyes and sunken cheeks, boldly facing their well

fed enemies, demanding of them an honorable capitulation, saying they would fight if it was not granted. The Mexican officer in command promised all of these things, and the surrender was made.

The Mexicans gave the Texans water in small quantities, fearing to let them have much in their present famished condition, and then made a camp while diligent search was made and all others brought in that could be found. Of the 193 who made their escape, 176 were recaptured, as near as we can determine from all statements that have been made by survivors of the unfortunate expedition. Some think that more than the number given were recaptured, two or three of whom died from drinking too much water afterwards. However, be that as it may, 176 drew the beans.

Those taken were now tied together with ropes and started to Saltillo, and on the 27th arrived there. Here an order met the commanding officer from Santa Anna, who was again President of Mexico, to have the Texans shot. The officer refused to comply, saying he would resign and throw up his commission first. There was one prisoner, James C. Wilson, who was a British subject, and the British consul at Saltillo finding it out, offered to release him, saying if it was necessary he would wrap the British flag around him and dare a Mexican to shoot a hole through it. Wilson, however, would not accept this protection, saying to all intents and purposes he was a Texan; he had fought with them, starved with them, and if necessary he would die with them. He lived to get back to Texas, and Wilson County was named for him.

The prisoners were now all ironed and marched back to Salado, the scene of their fight for liberty. It was now the 24th day of March. What a sad return—half dead and in irons! Here another order was received from Santa

Anna, which was to shoot every tenth man. The irons were kept on them and the guards doubled.

In decimating the prisoners it was decided among the Mexican officers to let them draw lots, so that each man would have a chance for his life. The lots were to be determined by drawing black and white beans—the white, life; the black, death. An earthen jar somewhat in the shape of a nine-pin was produced, and the beans placed therein corresponding to the number of men.

When all was ready the Texans were marched out of prison and formed in line. An officer now approached bearing the fatal jar in which were 159 white beans and 17 black ones. Few men in this life are called upon to pass through such a fearful ordeal as did the men who drew beans for their lives at Salado. For a few moments the men stood in silence, and then the drawing commenced. No more severe test could be made of men's nerve than this occasion. Soldiers will rush to almost certain death with far less chances in their favor, but this is in the excitement of battle, amid crashing of cannon and musketry; but to calmly stand and decide their fate in a moment's time by the drawing of a bean was worse than charging to the mouth of a blazing cannon. The Mexican officers were anxious to kill Captain Cameron, and were in hopes that he would draw a black bean, and to make this almost sure put the black beans on top, and made him draw first. William F. Wilson, who stood near, suspicioned that this had been done, and when Cameron stepped up to place his hand in the jar, said to him in a low tone, "Dip deep, Captain." He acted on this suggestion, ran his fingers through the beans, and picked up one from the bottom, and it was a white one. A look of satisfaction passed over the faces of the Texans, but the Mexicans scowled. The drawing now went on rapidly. "All dipped deep," and it was some

time before a black bean was drawn, the drawing now being done alphabetically.

Although the men knew that seventeen of their number were doomed, and that in time the fatal beans would come forth, still they could not help showing satisfaction when friend after friend held the bean which gave him life. The jar was held high, so that no one could see inside of it. The sorrow of the men was also expressed in their faces when a black bean was brought to light, held by some dear comrade who had stood beside them in the midst of battle, or suffered with them in the desolate mountains, and at last compelled to die—shot like a dog.

Most of the men displayed the utmost coolness, scarcely a tremor passing over their faces as the drawing went on. One noted gambler from Austin, when his time came to draw, stepped up with a smile, and said, "Boys, this is the largest stake I ever played for." When he drew forth his hand, a black bean was between his thumb and forefinger. Without changing the smile on his face, he took his place in the death line, only remarking, "Just my luck."

The prisoners were chained together in couples, and as fast as the black beans were drawn the unfortunate holder was placed in the death line. If two chained together both drew black beans, they were not separated, but moved together to the fatal line. If "one was taken and the other left," the chains were taken off and the condemned fastened to one of his companions in distress. Young Robert Beard was sick, and was not able to stand in line to draw and the jar or pitcher, as some call it, had to be carried to where he lay on a blanket, guarded by a soldier. Before his turn came to draw he told his brother Charley that if he (himself) drew a white bean, and his brother a black one, he would exchange with him, and be shot in his stead.

The brother refused, however, to entertain such a proposition, and both drew white beans.

It is told and believed by some that Big Foot Wallace drew two beans at Salado; that one of his comrades, a young man, expressed such great fear that he would get a black bean that Wallace, who drew first and got a white one, gave it away to this young fellow, saying he would take another chance. On one occasion the writer asked Captain Wallace if this was the case, and he said that it was not; that he never drew but one, and had no thought of giving it away. He said also that he could not have done so if he had wished, for he heard an officer say that there would be no exchanging of beans allowed when the Beard brothers were talking of doing so.

One young man, almost a youth, drew a black bean, and giving one appealing look at his more fortunate companions, asked them to avenge his death.

"Talking Bill Moore," when it came his turn to draw, said, "Boys, I had rather draw for a Spanish horse and lose him," He was a lively fellow, and helped to keep up the spirits of the others. Fortune favored him, and he drew a white bean. While the drawing was in progress some of the petty Mexican officers did all they could to annoy the prisoners. When one drew a black bean they expressed great sorrow, hypocritically, of course, and would say, "Poor fellow, cheer up; better luck next time," when they knew that this was the last chance the unfortunate captive would have.

Big Foot Wallace was chained to a man named Sesinbaugh, and often said if there ever was a Christian, it was that man. His turn came before Wallace, and as he reached for a bean he prayed for himself and Big Foot Wallace. He drew a white bean, and afterwards, in the dark dungeon of Perote, chained to the floor at the mid-

night hour, he sang and prayed and thanked God that it was well with him as it was.

As the drawing proceeded the chances for Wallace grew less, his letter (W) coming at the bottom of the list. The boys had "dipped deep" until nearly all of the white beans had been "dipped" out. When his time came his hand was so large he had some difficulty in getting it down to the beans, and they were so scarce he scooped two to the side of the vessel, and taking them between his fingers carefully felt of them. Wallace was a close observer, and he imagined that the black beans as he saw them come out were a little larger than the white ones. An officer now told him to hurry up, and if he pulled two beans out and one of them was black, he had to take that one. Big Foot paid no attention to him, for life was now at stake. He finally dropped one bean, and pulled forth the other one; it was white. He was satisfied the one he let go was black. The next two men to draw, Wing and Whaling, both drew black beans. The black ones were now all out, and the last three men on the list did not draw. An officer turned up the jar and three white beans fell to the ground. W. C. Wing, the last man to draw a black bean, was visibly affected. He was young, and when at home very religious, but had gone sadly astray, and this fact seemed to trouble him very much, and he referred to it repeatedly during the short time he had before the execution.

When the drawing was over and the condemned men stood in the death rank, their roll stood as follows: L. L. Cash, J. D. Cocke, Robert Durham, Capt. William N. Eastland, Edward Este, Robert Harris, S. L. Jones, Patrick Mahan, James Ogden, Charles Roberts, William Rowen, J. L. Shepard, J. M. N. Thompson, James N. Torrey, James Turnbull, Henry Whaling, and W. C. Wing.

Eastland was the only one of the six captains who drew a black bean.

During a few minutes before the execution the decimated men stood in silence, intently watching their captors, not a movement escaping their notice. When the firing squad was detailed and counted off some little sign of emotion was seen in the faces of some; nervous twitching about the mouth, bosoms heaving, breath coming quick and short. Others stood as calmly as if on parade. The irons were now taken off and they were led away to execution, bidding their more fortunate comrades farewell as they marched off. Many tears were seen running down the cheeks of those who responded to this last good-bye. A volley was soon heard, and the gallant men were no more. The bodies were then stripped and buried in a ditch which had been dug for the purpose. The remains of these unfortunate Texans were brought away during the Mexican war of 1846 by General Walter P. Lane and deposited in a tomb near LaGrange, in Fayette County.

The other prisoners were marched away to the City of Mexico, but before reaching that place Captain Ewing Cameron was shot by order of Santa Anna. We cannot go into all the details of what befell the others. Many died, some escaped, and others were liberated, but not all until 1844. The next chapter contains a list as near as it can be obtained of the Mier prisoners and what became of them in Mexico.

CHAPTER XXXII.

WILLIAM KINCHEN DAVIS, MIER PRISONER.

One of the early pioneers of Fort Bend County, was born in the State of Alabama on the 11th day of November, 1822, and came to Texas in the month of February, 1830. Six years passed away, and when but fourteen years of age he helped to build a fort at the mouth of the Brazos, and in 1839 served in a campaign against the Indians around the head of the Brazos. In 1842 Captain Davis went out with the Somerville expedition, and when the command dissolved on the Rio Grande and a portion of the Texans went on into Mexico and fought the disastrous battle of Mier, he accompanied this expedition, and was severely wounded in the famous battle. Although wounded, Captain Davis was marched with the other prisoners to the village of Salado, and was in the fight there when the Texans charged the guards, and after a fierce hand-to-hand conflict regained their liberty, and with others was again captured and marched back to Salado, and there went through the trying ordeal of drawing beans for their lives, drew a white bean, and was started out with others to the City of Mexico, and finally staggered into that place, as the saying is, "more dead than alive," and was then placed at hard labor. The captive Texans were finally sent from there and confined in the dungeon of Perote, and on the 16th of September, 1844, were released by Santa Anna and each man given one dollar with which to make the journey of 1500 miles back to the settlements in Texas, and our readers can imagine the toilsome trip and hardships endured until Captain Davis

finally arrived at his home at Richmond, Fort Bend County.

In 1845 he married Miss Jane Pickens, daughter of John H. and Eleanor (Cooper) Pickens. She came to Texas with her parents when but three years of age. They had five children, Fannie, who died at the age of three years, J. H. P., who still lives in Richmond, Eleanor, who married B. A. Hinson; William Kinchen, Jr., who was killed by the cars at Richmond August 14th, 1888; and Archietto, who married W. L. Jones of Richmond.

Mrs. Davis died in 1860, and is buried at the old homestead in Fort Bend County. Captain Davis commanded a company for about six months during the civil war, but was in no engagement. He married again March 5th, 1865, his second wife being Mrs. Jane Green, of Richmond. She died in March, 1895, and was buried in the cemetery at Richmond. Captain Davis died August 2nd, 1891, and is buried beside her. He was, many years prior to his death, a member of the Methodist Church. He was a successful business man, and one of the leading men of the country.

As peaceful and law-abiding in civil life as he was gallant in time of public danger and war, he came up to the full statue of good citizenship.

JUDGE JOHN H. PICKENS DAVIS,

A banker of Richmond, Fort Bend County, is a son of Captain William K. and Mrs. Jane (Pickens) Davis, and was born February 11th, 1851, in Fort Bend County, where he grew to manhood, and has since resided. He married Miss Susan E. Ryon, daughter of Colonel William Ryon, February 10th, 1875. She died October 30th, 1884, leaving two children, Mamie E. and Thomas W. She is buried in the family cemetery at the old homestead eight

miles from Richmond. Judge Davis married the second time Miss Belle Ryon, of Franklin, Ky., November 27th, 1888. Her parents were James and Elizabeth (Miller) Ryon, her father being a prominent farmer in the famous "Blue Grass" Region.

Judge Davis is a prominent citizen, and has always aided every worthy public enterprise, and is a man thoroughly in touch with the best thought and purpose of the people.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

COLONEL W. M. RYON, MIER PRISONER.

Colonel William M. Ryon, of Fort Bend County, one of the most gallant of the heroes known to Texas history, was born in Winchester, Kentucky, resided for several years in Alabama, and came to Texas in 1837, landing at the mouth of the Brazos, where he clerked, kept hotel, and followed various occupations for a time. In 1839 he was a member of a surveying party that laid off the town of Austin, the newly selected site for the seat of government of the Republic of Texas, and later went to Fort Bend County, and made that his home. In 1842 he organized a company and joined the army of General Somerville for the invasion of Mexico, and was one of the 300 who did not return home after the disbanding of the army on the Rio Grande. They completed a regimental organization on December 19th, 1842, composed of companies commanded by Captains Ewing Cameron, William M. Ryon, William N. Eastland, J. G. W. Pierson, Claudius Buster, John R. Baker, and C. K. Reese. William S. Fisher was elected Colonel, and Thomas A. Murray, Adjutant, and the command marched across the Rio Grande and captured the town of Mier, and fought the battle which has already been described, in which Captain Ryon received three wounds, and, like Captain Davis, was carried on with the other prisoners, and was in the fight for liberty at Salado, being among the foremost men led by Captain Cameron when they rushed upon the guards. He suffered with the balance all that has before been described, and when finally liberated returned to

Richmond, Fort Bend County, in April, 1845. He married Miss Mary M. Jones, and engaged in farming, stock-raising and merchandising, which pursuits he followed about four years. The family lived in Houston three years, and then returned to Richmond.

Colonel Ryon was a member of the Episcopal Church and Masonic fraternity. He died October 31st, 1875, at the home of Captain W. K. Davis, at Richmond, admired and respected by all. Mrs. Ryon's parents were Henry and Nancy Jones, of Richmond, Texas. She was born at that place December 28th, 1826, and reared in Fort Bend County. They had nine children, only three of whom lived to be grown. They were James E., who married Miss Josie Dagnel, of Richmond, and who died in 1895 at forty-four years of age. Susan E. married Judge J. H. P. Davis, of Richmond, and died October 30th, 1884, leaving two children—Mildred, who first married James Wheat, of Richmond, and who was killed at his home, and her second husband was F. I. Booth, of Richmond.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

J. E. DYER,

Son of Judge C. C. Dyer, was born at "Stafford's Point," Fort Bend County, July 11th, 1832, and was reared and educated in the town of Richmond, to which place his parents moved when he was but seven years of age. When he arrived at the age of manhood he engaged in stock-raising and merchandising, and in the banking business in Richmond, and in all branches of trade was a successful business man.

He served as county treasurer of Fort Bend County from 1852 to 1859, a period of seven years, and at various times filled positions of honor and trust. During the war between the States he served the Confederacy in Brown's battalion, "Wall's Legion," and was stationed for a time at Matagorda.

He was married to Miss Isabella Heard at Woodville, Texas, January 4th, 1859. Eight children were born to them namely: J. T. and H. L., Roy, Milton, Reginald, Maud, Julia and J. E. Dyer, Jr. Maud married H. M. White, and Julia A. B. Heard, of Richmond.

J. E. Dyer, Sr., died at Boerne, Kendall County, October 31, 1891, whither he had gone into that mountainous country in the hope that his failing health would be restored. His body was conveyed back and buried in the cemetery at Richmond. His loss was deeply felt and mourned, not only by his immediate family relations, but also by many friends throughout the county and elsewhere.

Mrs. Dyer's parents, George L. and Mrs. K. (Wright)

Heard were Georgians by birth, and came to Texas at an early day. Her mother's father was Dr. Isaac Wright of Tennessee. Mrs. Dyer had four brothers, who served in the Confederate army, and of these G. W. Heard died ten days after the battle of Corinth, from wounds received at Oxford, Miss. W. F. Heard was a banker at Cleburne, Texas, and died at that place. J. F. Heard lived at Woodville, and another brother died soon after the war. The mother and father of Mrs. Dyer died at Woodville, and are buried there.

J. E. Dyer, Jr., died July 25th, 1895, at the age of twenty-one years.

J. T. Dyer is a resident of Richmond, and has been in business there for twenty-two years.

CHAPTER XXXV.

FATE OF THE MIER PRISONERS.

Of the forty-two left on guard at the river, forty-one escaped to reach home. Major Geo. W. Bonnell was captured and killed. He used to publish a paper at Austin and Mount Bonnell, on the Colorado, above Austin, was named for him.

Escaped at the time of the surrender at Mier: Whitfield Clark and Caleb St. Clair—2.

Left wounded at Mier, and escaped: Robert Beale,* John Videler, Lewis Hays, Geo. W. Piland,* Nathan Mollen, William Rupley, and Henry D. Weeks—8.

Escaped at the village of Salado, and reached Texas: John R. Alexander, John Blackburn, Rev. Thomas W. Cox and William Oldham—4.

Escaped from Perote dungeon, July 2d, 1843: Daniel D. Henry and Charles R. Reese—2.

Killed at Mier: James Austin, R. P. Bassett, Joseph Berry, — Dickson, Wm. H. Hannon, A. Jackson, John E. Jones, Dr. Isaac W. Towers, Calvin White, and William Hopson—10.

Died of wounds received at Mier: Lynn Bobo, Hanks Kuykendall,* Stanley Locherman, Wm. J. McIllrea, Alexander McKendall and James Urie—6. Total at Mier, 16.

Killed at the village of Salado: Dr. Richard F. Brenham, Archibald Fitzgerald, John Higgerson, Patrick Lyons and Lorenzo Rice—5.

Drew black beans and shot at Salado: L. L. Cash, Jas.

*Fort Bend County man.

D. Cocke, Robt. H. Durham, Captain Wm. N. Eastland, Edward Este (brother of Mrs. President Burnet), Robert Harris, S. L. Jones, Patrick Mahan, James M. Ogden, Charles Roberts, William Rowen, James L. Shepard (cousin of the writer), J. M. N. Thompson, James N. Torrey, James Turnbull, Henry Whaling, and W. C. Wing—17.

Shot at the village of Huehuetoca by order of Santa Anna: Captain Ewing Cameron—1.

Perished in the mountains after the escape: William H. Cady, A. J. Lewis, William Mitchell, Perry Randolph and Sanford Rice—5.

Lost in the mountains: George Anderson, F. Bray, Jonathan Morehead, John Calvert and James B. Neely (recaptured at the Rio Grande and sent to the City of Mexico.)

Died in prison: Robert Beard,* William Beard,* Samuel P. Bennett, John B. Blanton, W. B. C. Bryan, A. T. Burris, Thomas Colville, Robt. M. Crawford, P. C. Grosjean, Daniel A. Holowell, Charles Hill, Allen Haldeman, John Irvin, E. G. Kauffman, William Martin, B. Middleton, William Miller (1), William Miller (2), William Morris, Peter Rockfeller, McDade, Samuel McLelland, John Owen, Elisha Porter, Carter Sergeant, Leonidas Saunders, John Shipman*, Joseph Simons, Robert Smith, Patrick Usher, Wm. H. Van Horn, James S. White, Zacheus Wilson, O. R. Willis, and J. P. Wyatt—35.

Released at different times:

By request of General Waddy Thompson: George B. Crittenden, William Reese, Dr. J. J. Sinnickson and Robert Waters*—4.

By request of John Quincy Adams and Mahlon Dickerson, of New Jersey: Israel Canfield—1.

By request of General Andrew Jackson: P. H. Lusk—1.

*Fort Bend County man.

By request of the British minister: Charles Clark, Jerry Lehan, Thos. A. Murry, Donald Smith—4.

By Santa Anna himself: Jeffrey Hill, and his two sons, Asa C. Hill and John C. C. Hill, and Orlando Phelps—4. Total, 14.

Escaped from the City of Mexico: Robert M. Crawford, Patrick Dougherty, John Fitzgerald, D. H. Gatis, John Morgan, Captain William Thompson, Samuel H. Walker and James C. Wilson—8.

List of the guard who escaped from the river: From Buster's company: — Hockstaff, William Hensley, — Hicks, A. C. Hidge, Hyde, Major McQueen, Thomas Ransom, Gabriel Smith, — Turner, Van Harm, Dr. Watson, and Warren Wilkinson—11.

Cameron's Company: John Canty, — Donnall, — Ernest, William Ward and A. J. Yates—5.

Eastland's Company: Geo. W. Alley, M. Ambrose, Theo. Bissell, Oliver Buckner, — Clark, W. S. Holton, Davis Hudson, Edward Marlow, E. A. Vincent—9.

Ryon's* Company: Edward Brown, J. Buchanan, William E. Dresser, Ralph Gilpin, Moses Kuykendall,* Z. Lucas, and one not remembered—7.

Reese's Company: Sidney Calender, F. Hancock, Virgil A. Phelps, George Walton, Thomas Warren, Guilford West—6.

Pierson's Company: Thomas Oldham, — Owens, George Smith, George W. Bonnell—4. Total, 42. Bonnell was captured and killed after he escaped from the river.

LIST OF OTHER MIER PRISONERS.

Alfred Alle,
Peter Ackerman,

John R. Alexander,
A. M. Alexander,

*Fort Bend County man.

W. A. Alexander,
 David Allen,
 George Anderson,
 Alexander Armstrong,
 James C. Armstrong,
 E. Arthur,
 James Barber,
 Daniel F. Barney,
 T. A. Barney,
 D. H. E. Beasley,
 Thomas W. Bell,
 Bates J. Berry,
 Samuel P. Bennett,
 Benjamin Z. Boone,*
 Henry Bridger,
 Ransom Boswell,
 B. F. Bowman,
 John Brenon,
 Gilbert R. Brush,
 James Burke,
 — Bush,
 Captain Claudius Buster,
 William T. Carter,
 T. J. Censeleau,
 Geo. Wilson Clark,
 Charles Clark,
 Wm. A. Compton,
 Thomas Colville,
 Willis Copeland,
 Campbell Davis,
 Stephen M. Goodman,
 F. Grubbs,
 — Hanna,
 Robert Harris,
 F. W. Harrison,
 John Harvey,
 Wm. H. Hasmore,
 Oben D. Heddenburg,

Charles Hensley,
 John Hoffer,
 Frank Hughes,
 Daniel Davis,
 William Davis,
 Thomas Davis,
 W. K. Davis,*
 — Dickson,
 Freeman W. Douglas,*
 N. G. Downs,
 William Dunbar,
 John Dusenbery,
 Leonidas D. T. Edwards,
 Capt. William S. Fisher,
 Wm. H. Frensley,
 Fenton M. Gibson,*
 William Gibson,
 James A. Glasscock,
 Cyrus K. Gleason,
 J. J. Humphries,
 Zed Isam,
 Edward B. Jackson,
 Jack Johnson,
 Wiley Jones,*
 Henry Journey,
 William Kiegler,
 Edward Kean,
 Richard Kean,
 R. B. King,
 John Lacey,
 A. J. Lewis,
 Wm. B. Lewis,
 George Lord,
 P. H. Lusk,
 Patrick Lyon,
 Samuel C. Lyon,
 T. B. Maltby,
 Alexander Matthews,

*Fort Bend County.

P. M. Maxwell,	Robert M. Pilley,
Wm. B. Middleton,	E. H. Pitts,
Wm. E. Millon,	Lorenzo Rice,
John Mills,	Francis Riley,
Lawson Mills,	A. J. Roark,
Wm. H. Moore,	A. H. Roberts,
William Moore,	Joseph Smith,
H. B. Morrell,	Ezekiel Smith,
William Morris,	Robert Smith,
Mark Rogers,	Thomas S. Smith,
William Runyon,	Wm. M. Stapp,
Capt. William M. Ryon.*	John Sweizy,
John Sansbury,	Thomas Tatum,
William Sargent,	Thomas A. Thompson,
Wm. Y. Scott,	Alfred S. Thurman,
W. H. Sellers,	Robert W. Turner,
Dr. Wm. M. Shepherd,	D. H. Van Vechten,
John Shipman,*	Robert G. Waters,
Donald Smith,	Francis White,
Malcom McCanley,	William F. Wilson,
J. B. McCutcheson,	Levi Williams,
— McDade,	William Wynne,
Daniel McDonald,	Isaac Zumwalt,
Samuel McFall,	Daniel C. Sullivan,
John McGinley,	John Tanney,
Chas. McLaughlin,	William Thompson,
— McMath,	John Toops,
James McMicken,	George W. Trahern,
John McMullen,	Wilson Vandyke,
Sam. McLelland,	W. A. A. Wallace (Big Foot)
James B. Neely,	Joseph D. Watkins,
Thomas Nelson,	James C. Wilson,
Harvey H. Oats,	— Wilson,
William Oldham,	E. B. Wright,
James T. Peacock,	James Young.
John G. W. Pierson,	

One of the Fort Bend County men had a very trying experience after the battle of Mier. This was Robert Beale.

*Fort Bend County.

He was severely wounded, shot through the lung, but managed to make his escape, and traveled all the way on foot to Richmond, Fort Bend County. No one can tell what he suffered during this trip from his wound—hunger, fatigue of traveling and many other things which sorely tested his nerve and physical powers. He was a long time on the way, but when he did walk into Richmond and was recognized by a friend, Thompson McMahon, it came near being the cause of his death then and there. The friend, through joy at his return, gathered him in his arms in such a devoted hug that the partly healed wound broke out afresh, and he came near bleeding to death. He partly recovered from this, but died a few years afterwards from the effects.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

JOHN MCKNABB, SANTA FE PRISONER.

John McKnabb, one more of those unfortunate ones who accompanied the disastrous Santa Fe expedition in 1841, was a native of Scotland, and came to Fort Bend County in 1837. He was at Austin during the early building of that place, when the Indians harassed the few settlers almost continually.

In 1841, when the expedition to Santa Fe was inaugurated, John McKnabb was there, and volunteered, as many other young men did, for the perilous trip, and suffered all the hardships of the long march across the plains and sandy deserts; want of water and provisions being the main cause of their sufferings while making their way through to the line of New Mexico. They were all finally captured by the Mexicans and carried to old Mexico, where they worked on the streets, lay in dungeons, and suffered all manner of indignities at the hands of their captors for nearly two years before they were finally released and allowed to come home.

On the return trip Mr. McKnabb took shipping at Vera Cruz and came to Galveston, and from there to Richmond, Fort Bend County. He died in 1894, and was buried on his farm on the Brazos River, five miles above Richmond. He has one son, A. D. McKnabb, now in the saddlery business in Richmond.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

SHORT HISTORY OF THE SANTA FE EXPEDITION.

This expedition to Santa Fe by way of the plains and deserts of Texas and New Mexico, at that time wholly unsettled as to Texas, and only scattered ranches, mostly Mexicans, in New Mexico, was a very perilous and uncertain undertaking, to say the least of it, and was almost certain to fail and bring untold suffering and death to many brave men who blindly went into it. It was not a lawless venture for spoil, as some would seem to think, of restless men banded together for plunder. On the contrary, the expedition had the sanction of President Lamar and some of the best men in Texas accompanied it. Furthermore, the President had recommended an appropriation by Congress to pay the expenses of the expedition, but that body failed to do so. The object was said to be one of a peaceful and commercial feature, to open up a trade with the people of New Mexico, and to extend the jurisdiction of Texas over Santa Fe and so much of New Mexico as lay east of the Rio Grande River. This was a part of Texas as defined by the law of 1836. New Mexico, in her isolation, was largely independent of Mexico, and was ruled with despotic severity by a few families who furnished the governors and consumed the substance of the people. A few Americans who resided in that country had visited President Lamar in the spring of 1840 and urged a measure of this kind, and said it would be hailed by the mass of the people as a great deliverance from severe thralldom. Although Congress had failed to provide for the expedition the President had become so im-

bued with the idea that he resolved to undertake its execution upon his own responsibility. Early in the spring of 1841 he began the preparations. Commercial men were invited to join with stocks of goods, and a sufficient number of troops were raised to act as an escort and to protect the party from Indians, who for hundreds of miles roamed over the plains at will. Circulars and proclamations were printed in Spanish, assuring the people that the expedition was peaceful, and the only wish entertained was to open up peaceful trade relations and give the people of New Mexico a chance to live under the liberal laws of Texas. To distribute these circulars three peace commissioners were appointed to accompany the expedition. They were Jose Antonio Navarro, a native of San Antonio, and a true, good man; Colonel William G. Cooke, a man of courage and experience, and Dr. Richard F. Brenham, a gallant gentleman born on the soil of Kentucky. George Van Ness was secretary, and among others was Geo. W. Kendall, editor of the New Orleans *Picayune*, who happened to be in Austin at the time, and went along for a *pleasure* trip. He afterwards published a history of the trip in book form.

The expedition left Brushy Creek (where they organized), fifteen miles north of Austin, on the 21st day of June, 1841. The commander was Gen. Hugh McLeod, and the number of soldiers was 270, not counting merchants, commissioners, pleasure-seekers, etc. The captains were Matthew Caldwell, Houghton and William P. Lewis. The intention was to employ Lipan Indians as guides, but failed to get them. For a long distance, however, everything was lovely, water, grass, and game were in abundance, and they continually feasted on the juicy steaks of buffalo, deer and antelope. All this changed when the heads of the Texas rivers were reached at the foot of the great

plains. Without guides to lead a direct course and find the water holes they soon became lost in the great trackless, grass-covered waste, almost waterless, and destitute of anything to eat except highland terrapins, snakes, lizards and other villainous looking things, all of which, however, were greedily devoured when found by the perishing men. They also had to fight Indians and lost several men in this way, besides some of their horses and oxen, the latter drawing the merchant's wagons. Without going into all the details of what they did suffer and encounter, will say that on the 11th day of August they thought themselves to be within about 80 miles of San Maguel, a frontier village on the Pecos River, east of Santa Fe. For the want of guides they had traveled 300 miles further than was necessary. Three men, Howland, Baker and Rosenberg, were now sent ahead to San Maguel in search of provisions and to ascertain in what spirit they would be received by the Mexicans. The main body followed wearily on over a broken country until the 10th of September, "devouring," says the historian, Kendall, "every tortoise, snail, or creeping thing." Almost everything had been abandoned, the oxen pulling the wagons had been eaten and the goods and wagons left to rot on the desert. Now, after another month of toiling and starving from the 11th of August to the 10th of September, the advance met some Mexicans, who gave them some provisions, and informed them that they were still seventy miles from San Maguel; but at a small place called Anton Chico and much nearer they could get some mutton from flocks there. Some of these Mexicans returned to those in the rear to guide them by a shorter route. The advance continued on to the Galinas River and there procured some sheep, "and a scene of feasting ensued which beggars description," says Kendall.

On the next morning the advance sent forward Captain Lewis, who understood Spanish, with Geo. Van Ness, Howard, Fitzgerald and Kendall. They bore a letter to the alcalde, informing him of the approach of the party, and that it was a commercial enterprise, peaceful in character, and the mission of the men sent forward was to buy provisions for the main party. They also carried numerous copies of President Lamar's proclamations declaring the object of the movement, and that if the inhabitants of New Mexico did not desire peaceably to come under the flag of Texas the expedition would immediately return. Lewis and his party left the Galinas for San Maguel on the 14th of September. The shepherds, at the Galinas River, had informed the Texans that the country was in arms against them, and that Howland, Baker and Rosenberg had been seized and imprisoned at Santa Fe.

There is something strange connected with this sad history here. *This startling intelligence was not sent back to the main body.* Howland did get out of prison and attempted to escape so as to convey the news to General McLeod, but was recaptured, and for this effort to save his countrymen was shot in San Maguel by order of Governor Armijo of New Mexico. Howland was one of the Americans who resided in Santa Fe and had visited Texas and urged the expedition on President Lamar, and by the act in which he lost his life proved himself true to the Texans.

In the evening after the departure of Lewis and party they overtook two Mexicans, who confirmed the report of Howland and party being imprisoned and the intense excitement prevailing in the country, caused by Governor Armijo informing the people that it was the intention of the Texans to "burn, slay and destroy" as they marched. This information was sent back to the party on the Galinas; but those in command there again failed to send it

back to General McLeod. On the night of that day Lewis and party slept at Anton Chico, where they were informed that they would be arrested and shot next day. Still they proceeded toward San Maguel; but on the way were surrounded by a force of Mexicans under Salazar who dismounted them and started them on foot for San Maguel. From this place they were hastened on toward Santa Fe, tied together in pairs and driven as cattle on the way to a slaughter house. About sunset they met Governor Armijo in command of 600 men on the march to attack the Texans. He saluted them as friends and asked them who they were. "Now," says one historian, "The traitor, William P. Lewis, gave the first evidence of his latent villainy." He replied to Armijo that they were merchants from the United States. Young Van Ness, however, at once denied it and said they were all Texans except Mr. Kendall, who was a newspaper man from the United States, and only came along for pleasure. Armijo pointed to the star and the word Texas on the uniform of Captain Lewis, and said, "You cannot deceive me; United States merchants do not wear Texas uniforms." As Lewis, however, spoke Spanish, the governor took him as interpreter. His companions on foot were taken back to San Maguel, where they witnessed the execution of Howland and Baker. Colonel Cooke, one of the commissioners with 94 men, had moved from the Galinas to Anton Chico. Salazar informed him that Lewis and his party had been kindly received and sent on to Santa Fe. On the 17th, notwithstanding the profession of friendship by Salazar, Colonel Cooke found himself surrounded by a large force under the governor. Cooke was about to open fire, when Lewis and the governor's nephew advanced with a white flag, and Lewis informed Cooke that there were 600 men around him and that he had seen 4,000 more who would be on the ground in a few hours, and 5,000 more

were on the march from Chihuahua (false), but that the governor had authorized him to say that if the Texans would give up their guns they would have permission to come in and trade, and after eight days their arms would be returned to them. Eight days—the same expression used to Fannin and his men to induce them to surrender in 1836, only couched in different words—then it was “eight days’ liberty and home.” In eight days they were taken out and shot. Notwithstanding the Texans knew all this they acted upon the statement of Lewis and surrendered. They could not believe at this time that Captain Lewis was a traitor.

The Texans were now all bound as felons, and without being permitted to see their friends, who had before been betrayed and captured, started them off to the City of Mexico, 1,200 miles distant by way of Santa Fe. After the capture of Cook’s men Armijo set out to meet General McLeod and his party, who, in a starving condition, had reached the Laguna Colorado (Red Lake), about 30 miles from the River Galinas. There the Mexicans met them. Without physical strength or means of defense and under a promise of good treatment this band of Texans also surrendered. As soon as the guns were out of their hands they were searched and robbed, bound in pairs and marched to San Maguel, where they arrived on the 12th day of October, three months and twenty-one days since breaking camp on Brushy Creek near Austin.

It is said Lewis received a large reward for his part in the transaction and Armijo wrote a letter to Garcia Conde, Governor of Chihuahua, in which he said: “In consideration of the great services rendered by Captain William P. Lewis in assisting me to capture the Texans, I have given him his liberty and his goods, and earnestly recommend him to the notice of the Central Government.”

On the 17th of October the prisoners, bound in pairs, started to the City of Mexico in charge of the brutal Salazar. Before they reached El Paso some died and their ears were cut off and strung on a buckskin string as a proof that they did not escape. One noted case of this kind was that of John McAlister. His ankle became inflamed and swollen to such an extent that he was no longer able to walk, and so informed the Mexican commander. Salazar ordered him to move on. He exposed his ankle and called attention to its condition again, declaring that he was unable to walk. Salazar, in a great rage, with many oaths, said he would shoot him if he did not move on. McAlister then exposed his breast and told him to shoot. Hastily drawing a pistol, Salazar shot him through the heart, cut off his ears, and, having him stripped of his shirt and pants, left his body by the roadside.

In due time they reached the City of Mexico and were imprisoned until July, 1842, when, through the intercession of General Waddy Thompson, of South Carolina, the American Minister, they were released and returned home—some of them in time to take part in the battle of Salado, fought on the 18th of September, 1842. General Wall, it will be remembered, had on this occasion suddenly appeared with an army before San Antonio and captured it. The Texans who fought and defeated Wall's army on the Salado Creek near San Antonio were commanded by General Matthew Caldwell, one of the Santa Fe prisoners. A few of these prisoners had been placed with the Mier prisoners, among whom was Dr. Richard Brenham, and he was killed in the desperate fight for liberty which the Texans made at the village of Salado. The city of Brenham, in Washington County, was named for him.

One lone Texan captive was left in chains in Mexico in the strong castle of San Juan d' Ulloa, when all the rest

had been released. That one was Jose Antonio Navarro. Because of his Spanish blood Santa Anna would not let him go. He visited him in prison and offered to release him on one condition, and that was, if he would renounce all allegiance to Texas and become a citizen of Mexico. The grand old man, with his white locks damp with dungeon mold and emaciated arm raised, from which dangled prison chains, looked the proud dictator in the face and scornfully rejected his overtures, and at the same time taunted Santa Anna with his perfidy, saying: "I am a Navarro. No traitor's blood runs in my veins. You can do your worst with me. I will die here chained on this prison floor before I will for a moment entertain a thought of accepting your insulting proposition."

Some years after, when Herrera became President of Mexico, he released Colonel Navarro and allowed him to return to Texas. He died in San Antonio in 1870, loved and respected by all who knew him.

Although the expedition failed, and many blamed President Lamar in no mild terms, the historian, Kendall, has this to say about him in vindication:

"President Lamar's estimation of the views and feelings of the people of Santa Fe and vicinity were perfectly correct. Not a doubt can exist that they all were and are now (1843) anxious to throw off the oppressive yoke of Armijo and come under the liberal institutions of Texas; but the governor found us divided into small parties, broke down by long marches and want of food; discovered, too, a traitor among us; and, taking advantage of these circumstances, his course was plain and his conquest easy."

To show that Lamar's idea of the value of the territory of New Mexico, which lay east of the Rio Grande, and which, by right, belonged to Texas, will say that in 1850 the United States paid Texas ten millions of dollars for the same. Texas recovered this during the war of 1846.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

A MASONIC RUIN.

In the old burial ground of Richmond is the ruin of a monument erected in 1825 by William Morton, a brick-maker and layer, in memory of a brother Mason. The structure is of brick about eight feet high from the ground; the shaft of four sides stands on a pedestal five feet square and six inches above the ground. From a projecting cornice the whole terminates in a point. In each of the four sides smooth brick slabs are inserted, on which are found in quaint lettering on one side this inscription:

“An honest craftsman moulders here,
Remote from friends and home;
His widowed wife and orphans dear,
How sad must be their doom!
His morals pure, his soul refined,
He acted by the square;
In him those virtues were combined,
Which time cannot outwear.”

On the south side is a well defined hand holding a “plumb-line,” both moulded in the brick, which bears this inscription:

“Behold, I will set my plumb-line in the midst of my people Israel; I will not again pass by them any more.”

On the north tablet is this inscription:

In Memory
of
Robert Gillespie,
Aged 45,
A Native of Scotland,
Who,
A Stranger in the Land,
Traveled to the Mansions of
Eternity
The 7th of November,
1825.
May He Rest in Peace.

On other slabs are the *square* and *compasses* and *level*.

Probably at that time there were not more than a dozen
Masons in all Texas.

During the short stay of Santa Anna's army here some
of the Mexican soldiers discovered the monument and be-
gan to wreck it and succeeded in knocking the top off, but
Almonte drawing near and seeing the Masonic emblems
made them desist and it remains today as they left it in
1836.

The bricks of which it is constructed was made here at
Richmond by Mr. Morton, and likely the first that were
made in Texas.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THOMAS J. SMITH, ONE OF FANNIN'S MEN.

Thomas J. Smith was a native of Georgia and came to Texas with the Georgia battalion in the fall of 1835 to aid the Texans in their struggle for independence against the government of Mexico. After the first fighting at San Antonio, in which the Texans were successful, Goliad and San Antonio were garrisoned until the invading army came from Mexico under Santa Anna. Colonel J. W. Fannin was in command at Goliad, and with him were the Georgians. After the fall of the Alamo, in which Colonel Travis and his men perished, a strong force was sent against Fannin. The latter had orders from General Houston to blow up the fort at Goliad and retreat east of the Guadalupe, but one thing and another delayed Fannin until he was compelled to fight the disastrous battle of Colita. In the first place he sent Captain King with about thirty men to bring away some American families from the Mission of Refugio, but these encountered the Mexicans and after a fight made their way into the Mission and there defended themselves for some time until under cover of night a messenger was sent to Fannin informing him of the situation. Colonel Ward was now sent with one hundred men to the relief of King and with these was Thomas J. Smith.

In the meantime the Mexicans had withdrawn and reported to Colonel Urrea, who was with the main body then on his march to Goliad, of the presence of the Texans at the Mission and he at once sent a force of cavalry back to engage them until he could come up with the main force.

When this body of cavalry arrived Colonel Ward and his men had already got into the Mission, and the colonel had given orders for the men to leave the place at daylight on the following morning, and make all haste back to Fannin. When morning came one of the sentinels reported that he believed a large force of Mexicans were in the neighborhood. To be satisfied on this point, Captain King was sent out with thirteen men to see if such was the case, the Mexicans as yet having not shown themselves. Soon after King left firing was heard in the direction he went, and Colonel Ward, with all the force, left the Mission and hurried to his assistance, but soon found themselves in front of 800 of the enemy and was compelled to retreat back to the Mission. The church was an old stone building, in ruins, but strong. Three sides of it, however, were exposed to an assault. The fourth side was formed by a stone wall, one hundred and fifty feet in length, used as a place of burial, and containing many tombs; from the end of this wall the ground descended.

Captain Bullock's company of thirty-five men were placed in the churchyard to protect the Mission from assault in that direction. The remainder of Ward's command barricaded the church, made loopholes, and otherwise prepared for defense. General Urrea now ordered a charge, at the same time bringing up a small cannon to batter down the door. The Texans waited until their rifles could take good effect, and then opened up such a fire, that the Mexicans, after repeated charges, broke away and fled. This battle, however, lasted nearly the whole day of the 14th of March, and the Mexican loss, in killed and wounded, was about two hundred. The Texans only had three severely wounded.

The enemy retreated to their camp about 600 yards distant and posted sentinels around the Mission. At night

the Texans, finding their ammunition nearly exhausted, determined to retreat; but as they could not remove their wounded, they resolved first to leave them a supply of water. Accordingly, after dark, the whole Texan command marched to the spring, about four hundred yards distant, scattered the enemy's guards stationed there—killing four of them—supplied themselves with water, filled the gourds of their wounded companions, and bade them a last farewell. Colonel Ward, with his forces, then set out on their retreat; and, marching through the woods and swamps, where the enemy's cavalry could not follow, they reached the San Antonio River on the third day. On the second day, however, a few of the men left the command in search of water, but did not return. The next morning, on the 19th, Ward crossed the river, and went in the direction of Victoria. That evening they heard Fannin and the gallant boys with him fighting the battle of Colita. They had abandoned Goliad and commenced their retreat towards the east, but had been overtaken in the open prairie by the whole Mexican enemy. Ward and his men attempted to reach the battle, but, darkness coming on, they found themselves in the Guadalupe swamp, where they spent the night. On the following morning they left the bottom and went into the prairie, but were attacked by 500 Mexican cavalry. They fired three rounds, but now, their ammunition being exhausted, they retreated back into the swamp and spent another night. The next day they set out again and arrived at Victoria, where, finding a large Mexican force, and learning that Fannin and his men were all taken, surrendered themselves as prisoners of war.

King and his men were all killed, stripped of their clothing, and left on the prairie. The three wounded Texans left at the Mission were also killed.

After the surrender, part of Ward's men were detailed as laborers. The river at Victoria was swollen and twelve carpenters and four choppers were called for to build a boat. Thomas J. Smith was a gunsmith and blacksmith and could also do carpenter's work, and was one of those selected to perform the work above mentioned. Among others were Pierce Hammock, H. Mordecai (a Jew), Thomas Harry, Dr. Lampkin, Ed. Patterson, A. J. Hitchcock, and three who were footworn remained, the others being hurried on to Goliad to meet their fate there a few days afterwards, when Fannin's command was executed.

Among those left footsore was Mordecai. He escaped with his life on that occasion, but was killed by Indians on the 9th day of August, 1840, during the great raid of the Comanches that year, in which they burned Linnville.

While these men were engaged in constructing the boat, or about the time it was completed, ten of Ward's men who had become separated from the command were captured and brought in and executed. Smith and four others were taken to the west side of the river (Guadalupe) to throw the bodies of these unfortunate comrades into the stream and would themselves have been executed at the same time but for the intercession of Colonel Holtzinger, a German officer, who belonged to the Mexican army. Mr. Smith and others were retained until after the battle of San Jacinto, and during that time he had to work on guns and mould bullets to be used against the Texans. Great confusion prevailed among the Mexicans, when the news of San Jacinto came, and many of them commenced a retreat, leaving the prisoners, but some would even then have been executed but for the good offices of Colonel Holtzinger. Mr. Smith made his escape, some say by being left by the guards, and others that he bribed the officer in command over him. Be this as it may, he came soon

after the war was over to Fort Bend County and made it his home the balance of his days, dying in Richmond in 1890. During his long residence in Fort Bend County he kept a hotel and livery business at various times, and served the county also as sheriff.

At Richmond, in 1843, he married Miss Mary E. Brein. Survived her and later married the widow, Bassett. Of the first marriage survive of his children Mrs. M. E. Russell, of Richmond; M. E. Smith, of Taylor, and W. H. Smith, of Houston. Thomas Smith, another son, was killed on a train by a negro desperado (who was himself instantly killed by another deputy), near Red River in 1896, while serving as Deputy United States Marshal. He left a large family, now living in Houston. Of the second marriage Mrs. T. J. Garvey, now dead; Louis Smith, now dead, and Mrs. Nora Briscoe, now living in Fort Bend County; one daughter, Virginia, married Walter Jones, both now dead.

CHAPTER XL.

THE BARNETTS AND SPENCERS.

These pioneer families, so closely identified with the early colonists under Stephen F. Austin, and in the settlement, organization, and development of Fort Bend County, came to Texas respectively in 1821 and 1822. Thomas Barnett's league of land, granted to him by the Mexican government, was located in the lower part of Fort Bend County at "Clear Lake," where Duke's Station is now situated on the Santa Fe road; the property now belonging to John R. Fenn.

The Nancy Spencer league, as it is called, was located on the Brazos River, eight miles above the present town of Richmond, and was granted to *Nancy* Spencer in 1824. In that same year the Craunkaway Indians attacked some of the colonists, and a company was raised by Captain Randall Jones to march against them. Mr. Spencer belonged to this company and among others was killed in the battle that ensued.

The widow, Nancy Spencer, afterwards married Thomas Barnett and raised a large family—one of these being Mrs. Sarah C. Dyer, mother of Mrs. Lottie Dyer Moore, now the wife of Mr. John M. Moore. Mrs. Moore inherited the Spencer league of land and owns it at the present time, it having been in the family since the days of the Republic.

Thomas Barnett was a member of the Texas Congress and one of the signers of the Texas Declaration of Independence. He was prominent in the organization of Fort Bend County, which was created from Austin County in

1837. President Houston appointed Mr. Barnett Chief Justice of Austin County, and also contractor to locate lands between Barnett and Wm. B. Travis. Among old documents, now in the possession of John M. Moore, are invitations from President Lamar to Thomas Barnett and family to attend receptions, and other social functions. This was while General Lamar was President of the Republic of Texas.

The great grandparents of Mrs. Lottie Dyer Moore, William and Martha Stafford, were also early settlers of Fort Bend County. Their league of land was east of Richmond and is now a part of the Cunningham sugar plantation, and Stafford's Station on the Southern Pacific Railroad is situated on the Stafford league also. During the Mexican invasion the Stafford place was burned by the advance of Santa Anna's army under Colonel Delgado.

Among other property of Mr. Stafford's destroyed at that time was a fine gin, the first, probably, that was erected in Fort Bend County.

The father of Mrs. Lottie Moore, J. Foster Dyer, was a native of Fort Bend County, and a prominent stock raiser and land owner up to the time of his death, which occurred in 1882.

Dr. Matt. Moore and his wife, Mrs. Henrietta Moore, parents of John M. Moore, came to Texas in 1852, and first settled in Wharton County and moved to Fort Bend County in 1857, buying land on Oyster Creek; the family however, living in Richmond, where Doctor Moore practiced medicine until his death in 1865. He was a fine physician, fearless in time of epidemics, cheerfully risking his life among yellow fever patients, standing as a tower of strength at all times among his people and died honored and respected by all. John M. Moore, his son, has been a prominent man in the business, social, and political devel-

opment of Fort Bend County for the last twenty years, spending part of his time in San Antonio for the purpose of schooling his children, but all of his interests are in Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER XLI.

WILLIAM STAFFORD.

William Stafford, one of the early settlers of Fort Bend County, was a native of Tennessee, but emigrated from that grand old State to that of Louisiana, where he engaged in raising cane and making sugar. He was married twice; his first wife was Miss Donald, of Tennessee, and the second Miss Martha Cartwright, of Louisiana. In 1822 he came to Texas as one of the colonists of Stephen F. Austin, and first located near San Felipe, but later settled at what is now known as "Stafford's Point" on Oyster Creek, in Fort Bend County, fifteen miles east of Richmond. Mr. Stafford had two residences for convenience as to the seasons. The fall, winter and spring place was in the bottom at the farm on Oyster Creek at Stafford's Lake. The summer place was in the prairie, a road being cut through the dense brush, timber and cane, nearly two miles, connecting the two places. His grant of land consisted of one and a half leagues, this surplus from the stipulated number of acres that each settler was to receive being added to his headright by General Austin for valuable services performed in the affairs of the colony.

At Stafford's Point he put up a cane mill and made his own sugar, having planted the first cane and made the first sugar in Fort Bend County. He also put up a good horse-power gin, the first one in Austin's colony.

In 1836, when the news came that the Mexican army was coming and would strike the settlements around Fort Bend, the Staffords, as did all others, deserted their homes and fled toward the east, leaving all they possessed to the

mercy of the dusky invaders. After the Mexicans had effected a crossing at Thompson's Ferry and Morton's, the advance took up the line of march for Harrisburg, commanded by Santa Anna in person. While on the march they came upon the home of William Stafford, which they pillaged and burned—dwelling, gin, cane mill, outhouses, and, in fact, everything which a torch would fire about the plantation. This was always the case where Santa Anna commanded in person.

At this time the Stafford family consisted of wife and five children, to-wit: Adam, Sarah, Mary, Harvey and Martha. The intention of Mr. Stafford in his flight for the safety of his family was to cross the Sabine River, but on the Neches River a messenger from General Houston overtook them announcing the victory at San Jacinto, and that they could return to their homes in safety. They came back by way of the battlefield and saw many dead bodies of Mexicans strewn over the plain, laying as they had fallen in the dreadful conflict. When they at last reached their home everything was wreck and ruin, presenting a most desolate appearance, no provisions except the wild game of the woods and prairies and fish of the streams and lakes. They had to commence anew and build up again to replenish the ravages of war. This Mr. Stafford in time accomplished, and once more had a prosperous and happy home, where peace and plenty reigned during the days of the Texas Republic. Three more children came—Joseph, Susan and Jack. Adam, the eldest, lived to be 78 years of age and died in Victoria. His wife was Miss Martha Hankins. Sarah married C. C. Dyer, who for a number of years was County Judge of Fort Bend County. Martha married Paschal P. Borden, and Mary united in wedlock with W. T. Neel. Harvey died at home unmarried. Joseph married Miss Anna Mulder, and moving to

Victoria died there. Susan married Dr. Frank Baker, and Jack married Miss Ellen Cain.

William Stafford died in 1840 at Stafford's Point, and was buried in the family burying ground at the head of Stafford's Lake.

CHAPTER XLII.

ADAM S. NEEL.

Adam Sylvester Neel, named for James Sylvester, one of the captors of Santa Anna, was born in Fort Bend County, near Stafford's Point, on the 25th of August, 1844. His father was William T. Neel, a native of Louisiana, who came to Texas with William Stafford. He was a young man and unmarried at the time, and was not entitled to as much land as heads of families, but located a labor near Stafford's Point, at which place he built a home, and afterwards located a league in the west on the Medina River during the Presidency of General Lamar. He married Mary, the daughter of William Stafford, who was the mother of Adam S. Neel.

When the Mexican army came William Neel and wife had two children, James D. and William T. Neel. They went with the Staffords and returned with them, and while their home had not been burned, a party of Mexicans had been there and thoroughly pillaged the place, carrying off and destroying the property; even the bread tray was found in the well. Two more children were born, Sarah and Adam S. Sarah was not married, and died with yellow fever at Hodge's Bend during the terrible epidemic of 1853. The family at the time were living in Richmond, and fled from the scourge, but Sarah had contracted the fatal malady and died at the Bend while on the way to Stafford's Point.

Adam S. Neel married Miss Ellen Stafford at Richmond, and their children were Cain, Aletha and Sylvester. Aletha married John Irions, and their home is in Louisiana. Adam Neel and his wife live near Richmond, on the east bank of the Brazos.

CHAPTER XLIII.

CHARLES S. McELROY.

Mr. McElroy is one of the old settlers of Fort Bend County who still survives those days of pioneer life, fraught with so much danger and hardships—danger from Indian raids and Mexican invasion, and hardships incident to a new and undeveloped country, where the wilderness had to be subdued, far removed from the necessities of life, except as they could carve them out in their new homes with the ax and rude agricultural implements. Sometimes the sole dependence for food was the rifle as the long months went by, waiting for the maturity of some primitive crop, which was watched with zealous care to keep the wild animals of the woods from destroying it until the time of gathering came.

Mr. McElroy was born in 1827, and came to Texas with his father, Phillip, in 1832, from Connecticut. They first settled on the Colorado River, eight miles below the present city of Austin, which was then not in existence. The headright league of the elder McElroy was located here, as were several others at that day and time. They had not long remained in their new home, and began to accumulate some of the comforts of life, when the few settlers in that region were greatly alarmed and disturbed by an Indian attack, in which two settlers, Harris and Christian, lost their lives, and another one, Josiah Wilbarger, was scalped alive, after being badly wounded. Reuben Hornsby, who was with them, barely escaped with his life. Soon after this distressing episode of frontier life, the McElroys left that country and came down on the Brazos and settled at San Felipe, where the father died in 1835.

In 1836, when the country was being swept by the invasion of Santa Anna, Mrs. McElroy and her children retreated to the banks of the Sabine River and remained there until after the battle of San Jacinto, and then came to Harrisburg, and from there to Houston in 1837, living in the first house built there. This house was double log cabins, situated at the foot of what is now Main Street, on Buffalo Bayou, and if still standing would be in the middle of the street.

Mr. McElroy has one sister, Mrs. J. W. Bell, living in Houston, and who has been living there continually since 1837. He himself came to Fort Bend County in 1840, returned to Houston for a short time, and again coming to Fort Bend, made it his permanent home for the last fifty-three years.

CHAPTER XLIV.

GEORGE W. PLEASANTS, AUSTIN COLONIST.

George Washington Pleasants was born in Raleigh, North Carolina, March 30th, 1809, and came from there to Texas in 1830, and first settled at Columbia, and lived there until 1833. There was a great cholera epidemic that year at Columbia, which nearly depopulated the town. Mr. Pleasants had two sisters to die there; one, Fannie, was the wife of Kinchen Davis, and mother of Captain W. K. Davis, father of Judge J. H. P. Davis, of Richmond. Captain W. K. Davis was a Mier prisoner, as will be seen from the account elsewhere of that expedition.

After the death of his sisters, Mr. Pleasants left Columbia with their children, and went out in the country to live. There were five or six of the Davis children, and two of the others, the names of whom (the latter) the writer has not been able to learn.

When the war commenced with the Mexicans in 1835, Mr. Pleasants went with the army of General Austin to San Antonio, and was in all of the fighting around that place, and helped to storm the town under Colonel Ben Milam. He remained with the army until after the battle of San Jacinto, and then settled in Fort Bend County. In June, 1842, he married Miss Jane Brush, who was born November 5th, 1821. She and her mother, who was a widow, came to Fort Bend on a visit to her sister, also a Mrs. Brush, they having married brothers. This was in an early day, and they came from New York on this visit, and, liking the country, remained here and made it their permanent home.

Mr. Pleasants acted as deputy sheriff under John V. Morton in 1837 during the year of the organization of the county and election of first officers. He lived to an advanced age, and died in Blanco City, Texas, on the 7th of January, 1891, while on a visit to his daughter, Mrs. West, and his granddaughter, Mrs. Spear. Mrs. Pleasants also died at Blanco City while on a visit there on November 1st, 1896. The remains of Mr. Pleasants were taken up one year after he was buried, brought to Richmond, and re-interred in the cemetery at that place. Mrs. Pleasants was not buried at Blanco, but conveyed at once to Richmond, and buried beside her husband. Their family consisted of seven children, four boys and three girls, as follows, commencing with the eldest: Francis Cornelia, Mary O., Edward R., Jesse G., Frank P., Guy M. Bryan and Emma B.

Francis Cornelia married Frank Bell July 11, 1866, she and her husband are now living in Richmond. Mr. Bell came to Texas in May, 1854, a native of Alabama, born in Green County, 1825.

Mary O. married Wm. B. Robinson in 1865. Both now dead and buried in Richmond.

Edward R. married Nettie Bell in 1869. Both now dead and buried in Richmond.

Jesse G. married Ettie Moore in 1875. He died in 1882. His widow survives, and they had one son, Robert, now in the livery business in Richmond.

Frank P. died young; never married.

Guy M. Bryan died at nine years of age.

Emma B. married John West in 1883. Both are still living.

CHAPTER XLV.

DISPOSITION OF MEXICAN PRISONERS.

Soon after the battle of San Jacinto the question came up as to the disposition of the common Mexican soldiers taken at San Jacinto. There were more than 700 of them, and the task of feeding them was great, owing to the devastation of the country, made so by Santa Anna. It was finally determined to give them away to any one who wanted them to serve as field hands or servants in any capacity, and most of them were soon carried away by the returning settlers. But few escaped from the battle field, and not many of those ever reached Mexico. One fugitive came to the home of John H. Pickens, in Fort Bend County, a haggard, starved, wretched looking being, and begged for something to eat, which was furnished the unfortunate fellow by the kind-hearted settler. He stated that he was a fugitive soldier from the disastrous field of San Jacinto, and that his name was Hosea Maria. He would never leave Mr. Pickens, lived with him many years, and died there.

CHAPTER XLVI.

HORATIO CHRIESMAN,

Whose land grant fronts the Brazos River on the west side, where the station of Thompson is now on the Santa Fe road, was born in Virginia in 1792, but moved in early life first to Kentucky and then to Missouri, where he engaged in surveying. In 1818 he married Miss Mary Kinch-
aloe, and in the fall of 1821 prepared to immigrate to Texas with the Kinch-
aloe family. They embarked on boats to descend the river, but winter coming on, they held up until the next spring, when Mr. Kinch-
aloe preceded the party to New Orleans, where he chartered a schooner, "Only Son," Captain Ellison, and sent five or six young men to the Colorado to plant a crop of corn. Mr. Chries-
man, with the families of Kinch-
aloe, Rawls and Pruitt, left St. Louis in a flat-boat February 25th, 1822. At New Madrid the party was detained by sickness, and Mrs. Chriesman and her sister died. Being detained again at the mouth of Red River by continued sickness, some of the men who were well took a boat load of bacon up Red River to Alexandria. All the river trade was then carried on in flat-boats. Arriving at New Orleans, Mr. Kinch-
aloe again chartered the "Only Son" to convey them to Texas. They landed at the mouth of the Colorado June the 19th, 1822. A few days after another vessel with im-
migrants landed at the same place. The supplies brought by both boats were left in charge of four young men, while the families went up to Wharton (present location), where Mr. Kinch-
aloe's young men had raised a supply of corn. The young men left in camp with the supplies were killed

by the Craunkaway Indians, and the goods destroyed or carried away. In 1823 Mr. Chriesman assisted in making a crop at the Clay place, near the present town of Independence.

When General Austin returned from Mexico Mr. Chriesman was appointed surveyor, and he held this office until the Mexican invasion of 1836. His assistants were Ross Alley, Bartlett Sims, Seth Ingram, William Selkirk, Thomas S. Borden, Moses Cummings, and John S. Moody, all of Austin's Colony. In 1825 Mr. Chriesman married the second time, Miss Augusta Hope being his choice. He filled the office of alcalde at San Felipe, and was in the army in 1835, but was on detached service when San Antonio was taken in the commencement of the Texas Revolution. He helped to remove families during the flight from the Mexicans, and missed the battle of San Jacinto. He died in Burleson County in 1878.

CHAPTER XLVII.

ADAM HAGAN.

Adam Hagan was an old and worthy settler of Fort Bend County, coming here from Kentucky in 1847. His sons, Bob, Henry, James and Charley, faithfully and bravely fought under the Confederate flag, following its varied fortunes over many bloody battlefields, until at last it went down, not in dishonor or disgrace, but crushed by weight of numbers.

Henry and Charley served four years, and the others two.

Thomas Sutherland, another pioneer of Fort Bend County, and grandfather of the boys above mentioned, on their mother's side, was one of the grand men of his time, meeting emergencies without flinching, and faithfully performing every duty which confronted him. Among many other incidents of his life which verify this statement was that during the yellow fever epidemic of 1853, which ravaged Fort Bend County, and especially Richmond. On this occasion Mr. Sutherland, with others, boldly came to the front, battling with the disease and nursing patients. In this perilous and exhausting work he was ably assisted by William Worthington and W. L. Davidson. The latter, a young man just from New Orleans, where he had been quarantined, and again stopped at Richmond on his way to the west, and having had the fever, was an immune from the contagious disease, rendering valuable service, helping physicians and the members of the Howard Association. Descendants of the worthy Mr. Sutherland still reside in Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

W. D. FIELDS,

Who lived many years in Fort Bend County, and died there, and whose remains rest in her soil, was born in Jefferson County, Kentucky, March 2, 1834. In 1855 he went to Howard County, Indiana, and was made a Royal Arch Mason there in 1857.

In 1858 Mr. Fields moved to Grayson County, Texas, arriving there in January, but first returned to Kentucky from Indiana before concluding to make Texas his home. During those days the Indians often raided Cook and Montague Counties, and Mr. Fields accompanied several expeditions against them, in which battles were fought of more or less magnitude. In the fall of 1859 he was in the Wichita mountains during an exceptionally dry year. Red River and its tributaries were dry for 100 miles, but around the mountains were fine springs. The buffalo were traveling south, and had to stop for water at these springs, feeding for fifteen or twenty miles around, and returning for water at night. The whole country was black with them, and from the top of a mountain overlooking the surrounding valleys thirty thousand buffalo could be seen at a sight, as near as could be estimated. There was no water due south from there for buffalo or stock of any kind for 200 miles, until the Brazos was reached, near Waco.

Mr. Fields had a corn crop in 1859 which was a failure, and having traveled over the northern States in 1856-57 got the idea of subsoiling. He put this in practice on his black waxy land in the fall of 1859 and spring of 1860, another dry year, and while the corn was all dried up in the

country, having so much loose soil, his crop continued to grow and hold out, and finally a good rain fell, and he made fifty bushels to the acre, while others did not make two bushels to the acre.

There were cavalry companies of United States troops stationed at Fort Washita and Fort Arbuckle, and Mr. Fields took a government contract to furnish Washita with twenty thousand dollars' worth of corn at two dollars and fifty-six cents a bushel. The civil war broke out before he collected the money, and he had to make a trip to Washington City in June, 1861, from there to Fort Leavenworth, collected his money, and returned to Texas the last of July. He then purchased 250 beeves and drove them to New Iberia, La., for the Confederate army, and sold them for Confederate money, some of which he kept until the day of his death.

At the close of the war Mr. Fields came to Houston and bought cotton and shipped to New York and Boston, and wound up with forty thousand dollars. In 1866 he drove cattle to Kansas, and lost nearly all of them. Cotton being worth one hundred and twenty-five dollars a bale, he thought to repair his shattered fortune by raising cotton, and moving to Fort Bend County turned planter. He planted 325 acres in cotton, and lost five thousand dollars, only making seven bales. This broke him, but he would not give up the fight. The country was under what was called carpet bag and negro rule, and Mr. Fields and a few others who said they were democrats organized and began to battle for white rule, and after about twenty years' work gathered enough democrats to change the tide. At the time of his death the following appeared in print:

“RICHMOND, TEXAS, January 15th.

“Colonel W. D. Fields, of Sartartia, this county, died this morning at 11:25 of pneumonia, after an illness of

ten days. Mr. Fields has been in feeble health for two years, but has been able to attend to business. He leaves a wife and seven children, four of whom are married. Mr. Fields is one of the largest planters in this county; has lived near Sartartia for thirty-five years; was for four years county commissioner; for years made the best syrup in this portion of the State. The funeral will take place tomorrow, the 16th, at 2 p. m., from the family residence near Sartartia. Interment at Hodge Bend burial ground. The Masonic Lodge at this place, of which he was a charter member, will officiate. He was sixty-eight years of age."

Mrs. McLaughlan, wife of D. F. McLaughlan, of Houston, is a daughter of Colonel Fields. Mr. McLaughlan lived for many years in Fort Bend County, and belonged to the "Rosebud Club," which finally developed into the "Jaybird Association."

CHAPTER XLIX.

THE LATE RANDOLPH FOSTER.

In regard to the death of Mr. Foster, the following was published in the Galveston News in August, 1878:

“RICHMOND, August 27th.

“Editors News:

“To enable you to see what a mistake you made in your issue of 25th instant, in your extract from the *“Four Counties,”** I enclose both what you said and the obituary of Randolph Foster, which by mistake you convert into an obituary of T. M. Blakely, his son-in-law, at whose home Mr. Foster died.

“Randolph Foster, as may be seen by the very terse and beautiful obituary as published in the *‘Four Counties,’* which would have been perfect had it been extended sufficiently to have presented ‘Uncle Ran’ to all admirers of true goodness and true manhood, just as he was known to those of us whose privilege it has been to know him personally, for so many long years, was no ordinary man. His character was one of a most unusual and marked type. Nature seems to have constituted him out of the very best materials of which pioneers are made.

“The solitude of the forest, with its wild, ferocious tenants, its rivers, teeming with fish and reptiles, the dangers, trials and hardships incident to extreme frontier life; all these had no terrors for him. On the contrary, he seemed to have had a strong and natural love for all these, and to have courted companionship with them with the same

*Richmond paper.

zeal with which he shunned and loathed the hollow-heartedness, the hypocrisy, frivolities and the arts of fashionable life, as so often witnessed. New Year's Day, 1821, found Randolph Foster in the camp of Stephen F. Austin and party, in the capacity of 'deer hunter,' on the banks of the creek which has ever since been known as 'New Year's Creek,' in Washington County, Texas. For many years prior to this he was in the habit of taking his horse and gun as his sole companions, and leaving his home in Mississippi, to spend months in roaming, hunting and camping out, in what is now the State of Arkansas.

"Finally, these pleasure trips were extended to Texas. It was during one of these that, in 1819, he made his camp, for a time at a beautiful point eight miles north of Richmond, and within two miles of the spot where he afterwards settled and lived for half a century, and where he finally ended his long and peaceful life, on the 18th inst. It was doubtless during one of these trips that, in 1820, he fell in with Stephen F. Austin, and became his 'deer hunter,' and went with him to San Antonio. He became one of Austin's 300 colonists, and on obtaining his grant of land, he selected it where it would include his old camping ground. In 1827 he returned to Mississippi and married a Miss Lucy Hunter. With his bride he returned to Texas and settled down upon the spot where he and 'Aunt Lucy' lived so long and happily, surrounded by all the home comforts, with doors always open to all comers, and a hospitality unbounded. In 1872 'Aunt Lucy' died. The magnet which for so many years had held 'Uncle Ran' so quietly in the home circle was now removed from him, and again his native migratory instincts seem to have, to some extent at least, reasserted their power over him. During the last five or six years of his life he was in the habit of mounting his horse and

going for weeks at a time through distant counties of the State, seldom or never sleeping in a house. For some time past his rifle did not accompany him and his horse, as formerly; the film of age had so clustered about his eyes that they refused to draw the bead on the game as of old; in its stead his fishing tackle became a constant traveling companion.

“During the present year, when more extended trips had, owing to rapidly increasing infirmity, become impossible, the lakes and streams near his home received almost daily visits from ‘Uncle Ran’ and his horse, and seldom or never failed to yield bountifully to his ‘stock and store.’

“Above I have aimed to give others at least a glimpse of the character and habits of Randolph Foster, who lived so long a life, in times of great changes and trials, without ever having made an enemy, and who died calmly, without leaving behind him a better or purer man on earth.

“He was born on the 12th day of March, A. D. 1790. Died August 18th, 1878.

“I am yours truly,

“J. S. S.”

CHAPTER L.

HISTORICAL BELL, ASSOCIATED WITH THE HISTORY OF FORT BEND COUNTY.

The following was written for the Galveston News in response to an inquiry for the history of the first plantation bell in Fort Bend County:

“FORT BEND COUNTY, October 6th, 1874.

“Editor News:

“In a number of your journal of some weeks ago, information was asked concerning a certain bell presented by Mr. Kendall, of this place, to the Historical Association of Texas. No one having responded to the call, I will tell you ‘what we know about bells,’ at least this particular member of the family.

“In 1835, during the investment of San Antonio by the Texas revolutionary force under Stephen F. Austin, and previous to the memorable assault led by Benjamin Milam and Frank Johnson, there was a scarcity of ammunition among the Texans. To supply this want the men took down the bells of Mission Concepcion, in the hope that they could be molded into bullets. Samuel Damon hauled a number of them to Horseshoe Bend of the San Antonio River, when and where the men attempted to metamorphose them into instruments of music that would sing a sharper chime for the Mexican ears than the matin call or the soft invitation to vespers. Fires were built under, over and around them, the mesquite fuel was piled on, and the flames fanned, while the men stood around with their ladles, anxiously awaiting the moment of fusion to dip in and ‘run bullets.’ But they were disappointed.

The obstinacy of the amalgam of which the bells were composed proved too much for our soldiers, and the result was an amorphous mass of useless dross. There were several bells (as many as six), and the one now extant owes its existence (in present form) to its unpretentious size and its 'voice so low and sweet.'

"This is not intended to 'point a moral' at anybody, nor to 'adorn the tale' of anyone else, but is a plain statement of a fact in the case. This was the belle petite of the sisterhood, and completely won the too susceptible heart of a sturdy soldier, the initials of whose name are Sam Damon, who belonged to Patton's company of Texas volunteers. This soldier was of Puritan pedigree and nativity, but of Texas education and habits, which fully explains both his appreciation of valuables and his subsequent liberal action in the premises. He saved the bell from the flames, and sequestered it until it was safe to restore it to light. After the storming of the city and capture of General Cos, Sam Damon brought the bell in his wagon to Fort Bend. It was in his stable when burnt by Mexicans under Santa Anna, and thus probably escaped observation and recapture. After the war he presented the bell to his fellow soldier, David Randon, who used it as a plantation bell, and it was the first used for that purpose in Fort Bend County—'the pioneer of sweet sound in the Brazos wilderness.' How oft in the olden time, when treading the narrow and winding paths through the dense canebrakes, oppressed with the profound density of the jungle, and anxious to reach the hospitable roof of my friend Randon before the darkness came upon me, have I listened to the soft peal of that bell, calling the then happy laborer from his work to refreshment and repose, and in many instances, like the fog-bell of the seas, directing lost ones to safety and deliverance. And when its mellowed sound came

floating in the still air of a summer eve, over the cane tops and through the vine covered branches of the old forest oaks, how many other sounds were awakened from the dark, still recesses of the deep-tangled thickets. The mocking-bird soared aloft to catch the inspiration, and, alighting on the topmost branch of the thorn tree, which sheltered his callow brood, poured from his swelling throat whole cantatas of bewildering melody; the solemn owl from his dim obscurity hooted his performance as his human congeners oft do from ignorance of merit, while the stately wild turkey, with characteristic vanity, responded with sonorous gobble to what he considered an especial serenade to himself and family. But there were other sounds evoked by that old bell, which from the dim vista of the past call up memories at once pleasing and melancholy.

"We have reached the gate of the cotton field, and our ears are saluted first with a prolonged whoop, quickly followed by 'the loud laugh which speaks the vacant mind.' We see the negroes mounted on their harnessed mules, converging in the 'turning row.' A stentorian voice is heard above the clamor, chanting

'De sun am down and my day's work am ober;
Dis am de chile what libs in de clober.'

"The refrain is taken up by a dozen throats, and the welkin rings with the wild yet mellow chorus, such as negroes alone can sound. The blue hills of Alabama and the rich valleys of Mississippi once resounded with these notes of happiness and contentment, but they are heard there no more. The cloud of northern hate and fanaticism hangs over the land like a funeral pall, and from it issue mutterings of political rancor or the demoniacal ravings of Voodooism. We thank God that we lived in the good old times of 'coon songs and stage coaches,' before John

Brown's spirit had commenced its journey, or locomotives had polluted the air or corrupted the morals of the South. But that is old fogysm, and don't suit the times. Well, the times don't suit us; so honors are even on that deal. Our bell calls us off from this subject, so unpleasant.

"Mr. David Randon gave the bell to the Richmond Academy, and for years it called 'the school boy with its satchel and shining morning face, creeping like a snail unwillingly to school.' It rang out the declaration of Southern independence and then burst with grief in tolling the knell of Southern freedom. We are not positive in this last assertion, but we have an elderly citizen who will 'swear point blank' to the fact, if it is considered a historical necessity. After the war for Southern independence the old academy was found in dilapidated sympathy with all the other ante-bellum institutions around it. Our community was too poor to repair it, and it fell into the possession of a wealthy civilian, who converted it into a comfortable residence for his family, and gave the old bell to the historical society, the very best disposition that could have been made of it.

"This is our story of the bell, and for any other information relating to it, we refer to Samuel Damon, of Brazoria County; Emory Darst, H. M. Thompson, and R. J. Calder, of Fort Bend.

"EQUAS."

From good authority it has been learned that the author of the article was Dr. Geo. A. Feris.

CHAPTER LI.

HISTORIC CANNON.

There are but few people, no doubt, in Texas, who are aware of the fact that the ladies of Havana, Cuba, soon after Texas became a republic, presented her people with two brass cannon in emulation, it might appear, of those patriotic ladies of Cincinnati, Ohio, who also presented the struggling young republic with two brass pieces, which fortunately arrived in time and without much to spare to help win the great victory which meant so much for Texas on the bloody field of San Jacinto.

In regard to the cannon now in question, we find the following in Daniel Shipman's "Frontier Life," published in 1879, and is as follows:

"A SCRAP OF TEXAS HISTORY.

"Some two or three weeks ago we noticed the recovery of two fine brass cannon from the wreck of the old Texas schooner-of-war, Tom Toby, and suggested that the guns be purchased by the Galveston Artillery Company, which was done. The recovery of these guns created some inquiry, and an effort was made in a sensational sort of a way to prove that they were a part of the armament of one of Lafitte's privateers, and never had belonged to the Republic of Texas. We took the trouble to institute inquiries, and have learned enough to know that these were on the schooner Tom Toby, and what is more interesting and which will render these relics of the past particularly valuable in the eyes of their present owners, they were presented to the Republic of Texas by the ladies of Havana.

"In proof of this fact we quote the following, which is the copy of a letter from the Acting Secretary of War, William G. Cook, the original of which is in possession of a gentleman of this city, to whose courtesy we are indebted for the privilege of making subjoined copy:

" 'WAR DEPARTMENT, COLUMBIA,

" 'December 3, 1836.

" '*To Messrs. Thomas Toby & Bros.:*

" 'Gents—I am instructed by the House of Representatives of the Republic of Texas to take necessary measures to procure two pieces of cannon (brass), which were presented by the ladies of Havana to the Republic. By a letter received by Messrs. Shrives & Grason it appears that they received from you, on board the schooner Tom Toby, two brass cannon, and they are under the impression that they are the pieces alluded to. You will please inform us as soon as possible if such is the case.

" 'Very respectfully your obedient servant,

" '(Signed) WM. G. COOK, *Acting Secretary.*'

"At the time this letter was written, December, 1836, Mr. Thomas Toby was the financial agent of the Republic of Texas at New Orleans. The schooner-of-war Tom Toby was blown ashore near Virginia Point in the great October storm of 1837, and there can be but little doubt that the guns now in possession of the Galveston Artillery Company are the ones alluded to, and that they are the identical pieces contributed by the generous, patriotic ladies of Havana.

"The gentleman who favored us with the letter copied above thinks that the reply of Mr. Toby will be found in the archives at Austin. This letter of Colonel Cook brings to mind a fact but little known to this generation, that the ladies of Havana presented the Republic of Texas with two pieces of cannon. Such an act, coming from such a source and at such a time, should not be lost sight

of, and all the circumstances should be preserved as a part of the history of the times. And I do think that the Texans ought to remember their Cuban friends, and particularly those Havana ladies, and assist them in their troubles.

“This letter also brings to light at least two persons who bore a conspicuous, eminent and honorable part in the early struggles of the Republic, Colonel W. G. Cook, the associate of the lamented Milam at San Antonio, and Thomas Toby, the government agent. Both of these gentlemen have passed away, but their generous actions remain green in the memory of their old associates, and those of the present day must not permit their services to be forgotten.”

CHAPTER LII.

DAMON'S MOUND.

This well known and historic place is situated on the old original grant of a league and labor of land conceded by the Mexican government to Abraham Darst as a colonist, but through intermarriage with the Damon family the mound became part of their property, which they owned for forty years, and the place in time was called "Damon's Mound."

After the death of Abraham Darst it changed hands many times, but forty or more years ago, while some children were playing in the head of a ravine, which had its source at the base of the mound, they drank of some water which seeped from under the mound, and stood in little pools amid clay soil, and discovered that it was sour. The idea occurred to the children now that if they had some sugar they could make lemonade, so one repaired to the house for sugar and cups, and told of their good fortune. The action of the children attracted the attention of older persons. An investigation was made, and thus was discovered the famous medical waters of "Damon's Mound."

At an early day all the lime that was used in South Texas came from this mound. It has an elevation of ninety-seven feet, and embraces about 3,000 acres. The limestone sets in forty feet above the level of the surrounding country. It is eight miles from the Brazos River and two miles from the San Benard River, and some think was originally in Fort Bend County, but is now in Brazoria County, the Fort Bend line being on the north side, near

that base. The trend of the mound is east and west about a mile in length, and six or eight hundred yards in width. Columbia, the old capitol of Texas, is eleven miles away in a southerly direction. North to Rosenberg and south to Columbia is a magnificent body of prairie, farm, fruit and vegetable lands, comprising nearly 500 square miles.

This mound is a strange place, a freak of nature some call it, situated as it is in this level country, and is one of the most picturesque spots in South Texas, rising nearly 100 feet above the level of the surrounding prairie, and gradually sloping in every direction to its base. West of the mound, beginning almost at the base, lies a great forest of liveoak, pecan, ash, cedar, cypress and many other varieties of wood. The lands have a black alluvial soil, and all well drained. Sulphur crops out in places, and salt has been found in abundance by boring.

Mr. R. T. Mulcahy, of Rosenberg, is the present owner of the land, and now has a contract for three oil wells. Eighty feet of the first one have been bored, and all the way through limestone except the first seventeen feet.

Mr. Mulcahy is a native of Kentucky, but has been in Texas since 1871, first settling in Fort Bend County, and has been here ever since, except at intervals when away on railroad business. His people were among the old pioneers of Kentucky, identical with the time of Boone, Kenton and Logan, historic names during the bloody days of war on the border.

CHAPTER LIII.

LORON HIBBERED,

An old settler of Fort Bend County, came to Texas with his parents in February of 1837, being then ten years of age. He was born in New York in 1827. His father, Elmer Hibbered, started to Texas in 1836 with his family, but stopped in New Orleans on account of the invasion of Texas by Santa Anna, and came on after the war was over, landing at the mouth of the Brazos River. He had two brothers, Lovell and Lucius, who came to Texas with General Sam Houston and was in the Texas army of 1836. One was a drummer and the other a fifer. They might have been the ones who played the air, "Come to the Bow-er," by which the Texans marched away from their camp to meet the Mexican invaders on the bloody field of San Jacinto. A fife and drum were all the musical instruments that were used on that occasion.

Loron Hibbered was on the battle ground of San Jacinto not a great while after the engagement there, and saw the bones of the slaughtered Mexicans. The elder Hibbered died in Brazoria County not long after settling there, and his people had to split boards with which to construct a coffin for him to be buried in, and when completed looked more like a coop than a coffin, such was the hard times the early settlers had to pass through.

After the death of her husband the widow Hibbered moved to the Stafford settlement, in Fort Bend County, and young Loron drove a freight wagon, making money enough by this employment to buy twenty acres of land from a man named Huffman, and on that, by cultivation,

helped to make a living for his mother and deeded the place to her. He afterwards bought more land and raised some stock, and still lives at Stafford's Point, and is seventy-five years of age, having spent sixty-five years of this time in Texas.

CHAPTER LIV.

TERRY RANGERS KILLED, DIED OR WOUNDED, FROM FORT BEND COUNTY DURING THE CIVIL WAR.

Company H :

Colonel—Frank Terry, commanding, killed at Woodsonville, Kentucky.

Second Lieutenant—Robert J. Calder, killed at Moss Creek, East Tennessee.

Third Lieutenant—W. D. Adams, died on the way home, after resigning his commission in the service.

Gustave Cook, promoted to Captain from Sergeant, January, 1862; to Major December, 1862; to Lieutenant Colonel May, 1863; to Colonel May, 1865; wounded at Farmington, Griswoldville, Bentonville and Shiloh.

Robert Hodges, wounded at Decatur, Alabama.

E. Griffin, captured, but escaped and died in 1869.

Jack Adams, wounded at Washington, Georgia, in 1864.

Addie Autrey, killed at Shiloh, April 8th, 1861.

Clem Bassett, wounded at Eagleville and Aiken, S. C.

G. R. Brom, transferred to 8th Texas cavalry as incapable of infantry service from wounds, and was again wounded at Waynesboro, Georgia.

James H. Brown, transferred to 8th Texas cavalry as incapable of infantry service on account of wounds.

David Cook, killed at Shiloh, April 6th, 1862.

W. B. Earnest, killed in second day's battle at Shiloh.

Jesse Dean, died in the hospital at Nashville, Tenn.

John Fowler, wounded at Macon, Georgia, October 20th, 1864.

J. D. Freeman, wounded in skirmish in Alabama in May, 1862.

N. Freeman, wounded at Newman, Ga., and Macon, S. C.

John Fisher, wounded at Waynesboro, Georgia, in 1861.

Jake S. Godsey, killed at Moss Creek, East Tennessee.

Steve Gallaher, wounded and captured at Murfreesboro, Tenn.

James Gallaher, wounded in skirmish and discharged.

E. D. Gibbon, killed in a skirmish.

A. W. Hart, captured and died in prison.

S. H. Jones, wounded and captured in East Tennessee.

James H. Lowther, wounded and discharged, re-enlisted, and died at Jacksonville, Alabama, in 1864.

John Lanier, died in Nashville in 1861.

John H. Miller, discharged, and died the night he got home.

Addie Moore, wounded at Chickamauga, and killed at Sandersville October, 1864.

Sam Moore, died in the hospital at Nashville, Tenn.

J. H. Morgan, killed in East Tennessee in 1864.

E. McDaniel, wounded at Fisher's Creek in 1861.

Floyd McCarty, died in 1864.

J. E. Perry, died in December, 1862.

John Ryon, wounded at Waynesboro, Georgia, in 1864.

S. B. Rory, killed in Middle Tennessee in 1863.

John Rory, captured and died in prison in 1862.

James Rector, died in Corinth, Mississippi.

A. L. Steel, wounded at Murfreesboro in 1862; promoted to Captain, and Assistant Quartermaster, in 1862; wounded at Farmington, Ky., in 1863; promoted to Major of Engineers March 10th, 1865.

W. H. Silliman, died at Shiloh in December, 1861.

W. B. Spencer, killed at Shiloh in 1862.

R. A. Torrance, discharged on account of amputation of leg from wound received at Moss Creek.

Henry Thompson, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

G. T. Walker, promoted Orderly Sergeant in 1862, and Assistant Adjutant on General Wharton's staff in December, 1862, and was killed December 29th, 1862, at Murfreesboro.

Other members of Company H from Fort Bend County:
Captain—John T. Holt, resigned in December, 1861.

First Lieutenant—Thomas S. Weston, promoted to Captain in December, 1862.

W. D. Adams, Third Lieutenant, resigned in August, 1864, and died in April, 1865, while on his way home.

G. Thompson, discharged in July, 1862.

E. A. Bolmes, discharged in February, 1862.

J. H. Edmonson, Fifth Sergeant, promoted to Quartermaster Sergeant, transferred to Texas and promoted to Assistant Quartermaster, and died in Galveston in 1868. He was a Brazoria County man, but enlisted in Fort Bend.

Dave S. Terry, son of Colonel Terry, and first corporal, promoted to Captain on General Wharton's staff, and subsequently commanded the scouts; now in the soldiers' home at Austin.

T. D. Barrington, wounded at Shiloh April, 1862, and left on the field in a hospital, and never heard from. Enlisted in Fort Bend County from Brazoria.

F. Z. Buckley, discharged in April, 1862, re-enlisted and again discharged in 1864.

L. W. Atwell, died in Nashville in 1861.

R. J. Adams, was from Robertson County, transferred to Company K, and died.

B. F. Adams, discharged in April, 1862.

W. H. Albertson, Wharton County, captured in East Tennessee, January 17th, 1864.

F. M. Arnold—.

Joseph T. Asher, detached to work in Confederate States armory.

Milam Borden, son of Paschal Borden, discharged in 1862, and died at Stafford's Point, Fort Bend County, in 1864.

G. H. Bailey, discharged in December, 1862.

E. H. Byne, discharged in 1864.

William Byrne, discharged in 1862.

D. B. Bohanon, discharged in December, 1861.

A. Brown, Washington County, transferred from the 8th to S. D. Lee's escort company.

William Bestiveck, discharged in 1863, and killed at Brenham in 1863.

Lytle Crawford, Galveston, present and always on hand.

G. H. Chambers, present.

O. M. Caleb, native of Virginia.

P. D. Crown, native of Kentucky, transferred to Gano's Texas Squadron.

L. S. Caloway, Wharton County.

B. Caloway, Wharton County, died in February, 1861.

J. L. Cox, Wharton County, wounded at Shiloh and captured in East Tennessee in July.

N. C. Davis, transferred to General Lee's escort company. Died in July, 1871, in Georgia.

R. A. Drane, Wharton County, absent, dead.

W. H. Darst ("Chuck"), discharged in 1862.

James Davis, Washington County, killed in Tennessee.

D. G. Davis—.

Pembroke Dyer, discharged for minority.

Steve Etherton, discharged in November, 1862.

C. H. Edmonson, Wharton County, transferred to White's Battery.

R. C. Ferris, discharged as under age.

M. L. Fitch, wounded at Murfreesboro in July, 1862, and discharged in consequence.

A. Ferris, died in 1877.

D. C. Fielder, Wharton County, wounded at Shiloh and drowned in the Colorado River in 1868.

B. H. Fatheree, Liberty County, died in Nashville, Tenn., in 1861.

John Ferguson, discharged in January, 1862.

S. Glasscock, discharged in 1861.

M. B. Groce, transferred from 4th Texas infantry on account of wounds which rendered him unfit for that service.

M. Houston, Kentucky, died in Nashville, 1861.

L. Herbert, after the war lived in Montgomery, Ala.

J. Hirschfield, Harris County, promoted to Captain of Wallis' Battalion, and died August 12th, 1877.

Arthur Hirschfield, Galveston, wounded at Shiloh and at Dandridge in 1864, and captured.

Jackson W. Hall, Washington County, discharged in 1862.

Herman Emile, Washington County, discharged.

James Jones, discharged, under age.

E. P. John, Galveston, died in 1875.

C. Himp, discharged in December, 1861.

F. Kimball, Liberty County, wounded at Shiloh, captured in East Tennessee, and killed at Hempstead, Texas, in 1864.

J. A. Lilly, discharged in 1862 and re-enlisted in a Mississippi regiment.

C. Lewiston, Freestone County, died in Nashville, Tenn., December, 1861.

J. A. Lackey, transferred from infantry on account of wounds received, which unfitted him for that service.

W. McIlroy, discharged.

C. A. Moore, Wharton County, died at Nashville, January, 1862.

G. L. McMurphy, Galveston, promoted to Lieutenant in 1863.

W. P. A. Murray, Colorado County, wounded September 3rd, 1863, and promoted to Lieutenant in 1863.

Isaac McFarland, present.

J. McFarland, brother of Isaac, now dead.

C. H. McMahon.

A. D. McArthur, Jackson County, wounded at Shiloh April 6th, 1862.

M. C. McKethen.

N. H. Morrow, promoted to Sergeant in a North Carolina regiment.

J. T. Maxwell, discharged in December, 1861.

J. A. McKenzie, Brazoria County, transferred to Company B, captured November, 1861. After the war served as Congressman from Kentucky.

Floyd McCarty, discharged in 1862, and died in 1864.

J. Miles, discharged in 1861. After the war served as Sheriff of Fort Bend County, and was killed by a negro at Richmond.

C. D. Nelson, transferred to 7th Texas Infantry, and discharged in 1862.

Robert O'Brien, Jackson County.

Tom O'Brien, Jackson County.

J. D. Parmer, Austin County, wounded July, 1862, at Murfreesboro, and again December 30th, 1862, and died in Alabama in 1863.

M. A. Page, Harris County, killed at Shiloh.

A. H. Perry, discharged in 1862.

W. J. Rhodes, discharged in January, 1862.

Ed. Ryan.

W. T. Reeves, Wharton County.

S. H. Roarke.

E. T. Robinson, Wharton County, wounded at Moss Creek, January, 1864.

T. M. Robinson, transferred from 4th Infantry on account of wounds, rendering him incapable for infantry duty.

James Rector, died at Corinth, Mississippi.

W. J. Sevilley, Liberty County, wounded at Moss Creek.

J. S. Stewart, Galveston, captured at Shiloh, escaped to St. Louis, and again captured at Moss Creek; escaped at Louisville, and died of wounds in 1864.

Nelson W. Shaw, promoted to Midshipman in Confederate Navy.

A. Shehan, Wharton County, discharged May, 1861.

Harrison Tankersly, Brazoria County, present.

J. B. Van Houton, Harris County, captured and escaped.

J. G. Ward, Wharton County, wounded at Shiloh, and returned to Texas.

J. M. Weston, Surgeon of regiment, resigned, and returned to Texas.

H. C. Wiley, promoted to Orderly Sergeant, and discharged.

W. W. Waller, Austin County, died in Nashville, December, 1861.

Clarence Williams, discharged, under age.

J. C. Williams, discharged in 1861.

Jonathan Coddington Williams in December, 1861, had pneumonia in both lungs, which necessitated his discharge. In 1862 he enlisted in Wilkes' regiment, Carter's brigade, was captured January 11th, 1863, at Arkansas Post; died in prison at Camp Butler, Springfield, Ill., March 23rd, 1863.

His brother, Joseph Smith Williams, was also a member of same command, and died at same place about two weeks before.

CHAPTER LV.

MEN OF COMPANY F, 24TH TEXAS, KILLED OR WOUNDED, FROM FORT BEND COUNTY, IN THE CIVIL WAR.

- Jasper Pharr, died at Arkansas Post.
Henry McGaw, died at Arkansas Post.
Kit Jones, died at Shreveport, La.
Thomas Cary, died at Shreveport, La.
Jake Roper, died at Shreveport, La.
Ed. Walker, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
J. C. Williams, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
Joe and Johnston Williams, brothers, died in prison at
Camp Butler, Ill.
J. T. Corbett, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
Lewis Lum, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
—— Killough, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
—— Childress, died in prison at Camp Butler, Ill.
Wm. Latourny, killed at Chickamauga, Tennessee.
Thomas McGhee, killed at Chickamauga, Tennessee.
Dudley Wright, killed at New Hope Church.
James Dagnall, killed at Jonesboro, Georgia.
Tom Modest, killed at Jonesboro, Georgia.
Jake Bleeker, killed at Franklin, Tennessee.
Wiley Ott, killed at Franklin, Tennessee.
W. H. Stevens, killed at Lovejoy's Station.
Dudley Gibson, wounded at Chickamauga, Tennessee.
Tom Gibson, wounded at Atlanta, Ga.
James Weatherford, wounded at Franklin, Tenn.
Bob Hodge, wounded at Atlanta, Georgia.
John C. Smith, died in hospital at Auburn, Ala.
Willis Weaver, died in service.

William Phillips, died at Arkansas Post.

Jeff Sutton, died at Arkansas Post.

S. M. Clanton, died at Arkansas Post.

John Fulshear, died at Arkansas Post.

Sam Tennelly, died at Arkansas Post.

Jeff Howard, died at Camp Butler, Ill.

Tom Roberts, died at Shreveport, Louisiana.

C. L. Fox, sick, came home and died.

M. G. Mays, sick, came home and died.

John Wyman, wounded at Franklin, came home and died.

——Housenworth, died in service.

Bob Hill, wounded at Lovejoy's Station.

—— Milstead, died in Arkansas.

Sam Mason, died in hospital.

Henry Compton, wounded at Atlanta, Ga.

D. R. Perry, died in Arkansas.

William Perry, died in prison at Camp Butler.

Bob Hudgepeth, killed at New Hope Church.

Wm. Pentacost, wounded at Ringgold Gap.

Zan Wade, wounded at Jonesboro.

Second Lieutenant R. P. Briscoe, while in command of Company F, at the battle of Jonesboro, was hit with a spent ball, which knocked him down, but he soon recovered from the shock without serious injury.

CHAPTER LVI.

MUSTER ROLL OF TERRY'S TEXAS RANGERS.

Companies	Total Number Enlisted	Killed	Wounded	Transferred	Discharged	Deceased	Promoted out of the Regiment	Absent
A	117	16	27	4	22	18	4	5
B	167	26	38	6	31	22	13	8
C	87	11	16	3	12	16	5	4
D	134	29	33	3	19	23	1	3
E	105	14	30	2	16	14	2	4
F	114	13	23	4	21	17	1	5
G	87	12	14	2	11	17	2	3
H	133	19	40	3	17	21	2	5
I	100	13	33	2	17	13	3	4
K	126	12	26	4	24	19	5	5
	1170	165	280	33	190	180	38	46

Those marked absent were not all deserters. Many were cut off from the command while on hazardous duty; some were furloughed and did not get back in time; some joined other commands, and some became scouts. Others took French furloughs to see their sweethearts. Only one or two went to the enemy.

ORIGINAL FIELD STAFF.

Benjamin Franklin Terry, elected Colonel at the organization, October 28th, 1861; killed at Woodsonville, Kentucky (better known as Rowlett's Station), in battle, December 17th, 1861.

Thomas S. Lubbock, Harris County, elected Lieutenant Colonel October 28th, 1861; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 9th, 1862.

Thomas Harrison, Waco, Texas, elected Major at the organization, promoted to Lieutenant Colonel and Brigadier General, and wounded at Johnsonville, North Carolina, March 10th, 1865.

Martin H. Royston, Galveston, appointed Adjutant by Colonel Terry, and subsequently appointed Captain and Major in Adjutant General's Department.

Benjamin H. Botts, Houston, Texas, appointed Assistant Quartermaster by Colonel Terry, and subsequently Major and Assistant Quartermaster.

Robert H. Simmons, Gonzales County, Mississippi, appointed Commissary by Colonel Terry, and subsequently Assistant Commissary Sergeant.

Dr. John M. Weston, Richmond, Texas, appointed Surgeon by Colonel Terry, and resigned April, 1862.

Dr. Robert E. Hill, Bastrop County, appointed Surgeon, four times prisoner of war, captured in the discharge of duty.

William B. Sayers, Gonzales, Texas, appointed Sergeant Major at organization, promoted to Adjutant by Colonel Harrison, Major in Adjutant General's Department by General Harrison, and wounded at Johnsonville March 10th, 1865.

M. F. Balegathay, Houston, Texas, appointed Quartermaster Sergeant by Colonel Terry, and was afterwards discharged.

James Edmunson, Brazoria, Texas, appointed Ordnance Sergeant, and subsequently Assistant Quartermaster Sergeant.

Thomas J. Potts, Bastrop, Texas, appointed Hospital Stewart by Colonel Terry, and subsequently Surgeon, and absent when the war ended.

COMPANY A.

(Enlisted by Lieutenant J. W. Sparks.)

Thomas Harrison, Captain, Waco, Texas, elected Major at the organization.

Rufus Y. King, 1st Lieutenant, Burleson County, elected Captain at organization, wounded at Shiloh and resigned.

W. H. Jones, Falls County, Texas, elected Lieutenant at organization, wounded in East Tennessee, January 12th, 1864, retired.

M. L. Gordon, Jr., 2nd Lieutenant, Bosque County, Texas, promoted 2nd Lieutenant, wounded at Shiloh, and subsequently Captain of Wharton's scouts.

T. C. Freeman, 1st Sergeant, Bell County, Texas, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

Dan Neel, 2nd Sergeant.

Rufus Beavers, 3rd Sergeant, Coryell County, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

G. Thompson, 4th Sergeant, Falls County, Texas, died at Nashville, Tennessee.

Edward Ross, 1st Corporal.

Thomas A. Porter, 2nd Corporal.

William Baldrige, 3rd Corporal, Milam County, Texas, died at Atlanta, Georgia, in 1862.

A. A. Rundle, 4th Corporal, Burleson County, Texas, died near Courtland, Alabama, May, 1862.

PRIVATES.

James Allen, Falls County, Texas, discharged at Bowling Green, Kentucky:

R. C. A. Rundle, Burleson County, Texas, appointed Commissary Sergeant.

Charles A. Allday, Burleson County, Texas, wounded and captured July 4th, 1863.

Preston Calvert Baker, Washington County, Texas, promoted to Lieutenant of White's Battery in 1863, subsequently to Ordnance Department.

Gabe B. Beaumont, Washington County, Texas, wounded at Triune, Tenn., and discharged in 1863.

J. W. Brown, Falls County, Texas.

S. M. Baker, Washington County, Texas, discharged July, 1862.

C. F. Baker, Washington County, Texas, discharged November, 1862.

A. C. Baker, Washington County, Texas, discharged.

Thomas W. Carson, Coryell County, Texas.

John Copehart, Falls County, Texas, discharged in 1862.

Thomas Cade, Burleson County, Texas, discharged at Corinth, Miss.

Elijah F. Davidson, Falls County, Texas, wounded May 9th, 1862.

T. Jeff Dubose, Burleson County, Texas.

B. F. Denton, Falls County, Texas.

— Douglas, Grimes County, Texas, died at Nashville, Tenn.

W. H. Evans, Falls County, Texas.

Robert Elgin, Washington County, Texas.

—Fielder, transferred from 11th Tennessee Infantry.

—Foak, Falls County, Texas.

Henry Grigg, Burleson County, Texas, discharged at Corinth, Miss.

D. Courthouse, Milam County, Texas, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky.

Sam S. Gott, Falls County, Texas.

W. H. H. Gordon, Burleson County, Texas.

Daniel Graham, Milam County, Texas, supposed to have been captured.

Al. M. Gott, Falls County, Texas.

D. Gordon, Milam County, Texas, died in Pulaski, Tenn.

D. Holesworth, Milam County, Texas, killed at Shiloh.

John Hannah, Bosque County, Texas, prisoner.

William Harmon, transferred from 4th Texas infantry.

Jonah Jackson, Brazos County, Texas, killed in East Tennessee, December 29th, 1863.

D. C. Jones, Burleson County, Texas, wounded three times.

H. H. Jones, Burleson County, Texas, died in hospital at Montgomery, Alabama.

J. N. Jones, Montgomery County, Texas, killed June, 1864, on retreat from Dalton.

M. Jones, from Tennessee.

B. Johnson, Milam County, Texas, died in Nashville, Tenn.

J. H. Keen, Bosque County, Texas.

J. P. Kelley, Burleson County, Texas.

T. King, Burleson County, Texas, died at Nashville, Tenn.

H. Kingsbury, Erath County, Texas, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky.

James Logan, Kentucky, killed December 29th, in East Tennessee.

J. M. Lane, Burleson County, Texas, killed at Farmington, Tenn., October, 1863.

Thomas D. Leanord, McLennan County, Texas.

G. W. Laxton, Bell County, Texas.

John C. Lowe, Captain, Erath County, Texas, elected 2nd Lieutenant at organization, promoted Captain, wounded at Shiloh and other places, and died at Stephenville, Erath County, in 1876.

D. Mumford, Milam County, Texas.

Albert Medford, Bosque County, Texas, died at Nashville, Tenn.

W. B. Martin, Burleson County, Texas, died of wounds received at Triune, Tenn.

R. D. McCann, wounded at Farmington and left on field.

J. S. Moser, Burleson County, Texas, died at Rome, Ga., September 8th, 1863.

Dan P. Moser, Burleson County, Texas.

Peter L. Martin, Burleson County, Texas, killed at Dalton, Georgia, May 7th, 1864.

Thomas Mitchell, Milam County, Texas, died at Bowling Green, Kentucky.

M. M. Moak, Burleson County, Texas.

Dan Neel, Bosque County, Texas, killed at Shiloh.

C. W. Neel, Burleson County, Texas, wounded at Johnsonville, North Carolina, March 18th, 1865.

T. R. Owen, Washington County, Texas, wounded at Greenville, Georgia, died in June, 1874.

H. Pierson, Falls County, Texas, discharged at Murfreesboro, Tenn.

M. H. Porter, Burleson County, Texas, discharged at Corinth, 1862.

T. A. Porter, Burleson County, Texas, wounded at Farmington and furloughed.

C. B. Peare, McLennan County, Texas, appointed Commissary 1862.

C. M. Peare, McLennan County, Texas, elected Lieutenant, commanded company two years.

Tom J. Pruitt, Falls County, Texas.

J. C. Poole, Falls County, Texas.

Pat Rogers, discharged at Murfreesboro in 1862, and died in April, 1867.

— Route, Washington County, Texas, died at Chattanooga, accidentally shot.

G. W. Randle, Bosque County, Texas, discharged on account of bad health.

J. A. Randle, Bosque County, Texas.

John P. Randle, Washington County, Texas.

Gaston Raynor, Comanche County, Texas, left sick in Tennessee, Wheeler rear raid, September, 1864.

A. Robinson, Falls County, Texas, wounded and left in the hands of the enemy at Bardstown, October 4th, 1862.

C. F. Ravels, Burleson County, Texas, died near Bardstown, Ky., October 1st, 1862.

W. C. B. Richards, Milam County, Texas.

S. L. Richards, Milam County, Texas, wounded in South Carolina February, 1865.

J. T. B. Richards, Milam County, Texas, missing.

Edward Ross, Milam County, Texas, killed in Forrest raid in the rear at Murfreesboro, Tenn., July, 1862.

Ed. Rogers, discharged by substitution at Corinth, Miss., in 1862.

William Richards, discharged at Corinth, Miss.

T. D. Sanders, Burleson County, Texas, furloughed to Texas.

A. J. Skinner, Comanche County, Texas.

J. T. Stewart, Milam County, Texas, prisoner.

Frank Smolker, wounded at Shiloh and died.

A. A. Stoveall, Burleson County, Texas.

Wiley Smith, Washington County, Texas.

A. Stoneman, Grimes County, Texas, wounded twice and killed in North Carolina in 1865.

S. G. Sybert, Wharton.

J. Stonume, Grimes County, Texas, discharged by giving a substitute.

S. A. Stiles, Harris County, Texas, discharged at Bowling Green Ky., and killed at San Antonio, Texas, in an altercation.

J. H. Todd, McLennan County, Texas.

William B. Thompson, Washington County, Texas, discharged at Chattanooga, Tenn.

— Vaughan, Milam County, Texas, died at Nashville, Tenn.

A. A. Wilson, Burleson County, Texas.

W. H. Word, Nashville, Tenn.

J. H. Wallace, Washington County, Texas, wounded in East Tennessee, and left in the hands of the enemy.

John Aycock, Falls County, Texas, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky.

Bryant Aycock, Burleson County, Texas, died at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

COMPANY B.

John A. Wharton, Captain, Brazoria County, Texas, elected Colonel of the regiment January, 1862, promoted Brigadier General, October, 1862, Major General, and transferred, wounded twice, transferred to Mississippi Department, and killed in private altercation at Houston, Texas, by Colonel Geo. W. Baylor.

Geo. M. McNeil, 1st Lieutenant, Brazoria County, resigned at Oakland, Ky., in 1862.

William Henry Shark, 2nd Lieutenant, Brazoria County, promoted.

T. J. Bennett, 3rd Lieutenant, Brazoria County, promoted.

J. C. Herndon, 1st Sergeant, Brazoria County.

William Groce, 2nd Sergeant, Austin County, Texas, elected 1st Lieutenant January 1st, 1862, resigned April, 1862.

E. A. Herndon, Harris County, Texas, wounded at Waynesboro, Ga., died in San Antonio, Texas, in 1876.

C. J. Gautier, 4th Sergeant, Brazoria County, Texas, detached to Texas with General John A. Wharton.

William B. Maxey, 1st Corporal, Brazoria County, killed at Newman, Ga., in 1864.

Sam Mimms, 2nd Corporal, Brazoria County, killed at Murfreesboro, with General Bedford Forrest.

Jule Manor, 3rd Corporal, Brazoria County, wounded at Newman, Ga., July, 1864.

W. W. Nance, 4th Corporal, Matagorda County.

PRIVATES.

P. Archer, Brazoria County, killed in Kentucky July, 1863.

Dr. J. C. Asheramb, Brazoria County, discharged at Corinth April, 1862, died January 20th, 1882.

Sam S. Ash, Harris County, promoted 1st Lieutenant and transferred to battery and wounded.

William Ash, Harris County, killed at Shiloh April 7th, 1862.

Gaston Ash, Harris County, discharged at Corinth, Miss., April, 1862.

R. A. Allen, Harris County, appointed Orderly Sergeant, wounded at Rome, Georgia.

J. D. Afflect, Washington County, discharged by giving substitute at Sparta, Tenn., 1863.

— Aldridge, Brazoria County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

C. S. Bennett, Brazoria County, captured in Tennessee and paroled.

B. M. Bennett, Austin County, discharged November, 1862.

M. Bracy, Captain of company, Fayette County, Texas, transferred from Company F to Company B.

J. H. Burney, Brazoria County, present.

W. K. Burney, Brazoria County, discharged November, 1862.

Robert Burney, Brazoria County, discharged at Woodburn in 1862.

Green A. Bolinger, Brazoria County, killed in front of Atlanta on July 22nd, 1864.

Joe Bates, Brazoria County, transferred from the regiment in November, 1863.

Joe S. Baugham, Calhoun County, present.

T. J. Barker, Lavaca County, captured in Georgia.

H. C. Bradbury, Calhoun County, missing, supposed killed in Tennessee, in Wheeler's raid in 1863.

James Bradshaw, Wharton County, Texas, transferred to the Havalina's, Company G, Bowling Green.

William Bridges, Brazoria County, discharged early in 1862.

James Bush, Brazoria County, died in the hospital in Nashville in 1862.

J. Perry Bryan, Brazoria County, transferred to West Mississippi by promotion to 1st Lieutenant in 1863.

Sam A. Bryan, Brazoria County, wounded and transferred to the Trans-Mississippi Department in 1863.

S. I. Bryan, Brazoria County, transferred to Trans-Mississippi Department in 1863.

Robert Bruce, Brazoria County, transferred to White's Battery in 1862.

E. M. Bussey, Brazoria County, blacksmith.

W. J. Bussey, Matagorda County.

J. L. Compton, Washington County, one of Shannon's effective scouts.

Robert Cuiston, Brazoria County.

William Cuiston, Brazoria County.

S. S. Crisp, Colorado County, killed in Kentucky July, 1863.

A. Crisp, Colorado County, discharged in August, 1862.

R. C. Crisp, Colorado County.

Geo. M. Collingsworth, Matagorda County, wounded in Cassville, Ga., May 12, 1863.

George Cheesman, Matagorda County, discharged in June, 1862.

W. P. Churchill, Brazoria County, present.

E. G. Chambers, Austin County, present.

Robert Campbell, Lavaca County, died at Shelbyville, Tenn., 1863.

J. M. Crain, Calhoun County, present.

T. F. Crain, Calhoun County, present.

W. W. Cannon, Brazoria County, present.

William D. Cleveland, Austin County, appointed Regiment Quartermaster Clerk.

A. G. Chanapin, Brazoria County, detailed in saddle shop.

Tom Chanapin, Brazoria County, killed at Shiloh April 8th, 1862.

R. K. Chathan, Austin County, wounded at Bardstown, Ky., in 1864, and discharged.

K. K. Chathan, Austin County, died at Woodburn, Ky., December 6, 1861.

C. O. Cassey, Austin County, wounded and left at Murfreesboro, and subsequently captured.

J. D. Cochran, Austin County, present.

B. H. Davis, Brazos, Texas, promoted to Ordnance Office and transferred with Wharton.

N. B. Davis, Brazos, Texas, present.

W. P. Dever, Washington County, present.

J. T. Dial, Brazoria County, wounded accidentally April, 1865.

William Duncan, Brazoria County, wounded and left at Perryville, Ky.

John Eisel, Brazoria County, blacksmith, discharged at Oakland, Ky.

W. W. Eckols, Burleson County, wounded at Chickamauga, discharged and died from effect of wound.

John B. Estes, Brazoria County, wounded at Murfreesboro, and died from wounds at Cave Springs, Ga.

T. J. Estes, Brazoria County, saddle shop.

A. Frank, Austin County, present.

Ike Fulkerson, Washington County, elected Lieutenant August, 1863, wounded at Cassville, Ga., May 12, 1863.

William Fleming, Guadalupe County, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

Henry C. Flournoy, Brazoria County, discharged at Shelbyville, Tenn.

A. S. Gillett, Walker County, killed at Cedar Bayou, Harris County, in 1868.

J. Freeman, Fort Bend County, transferred from company H to B.

R. F. Garrett, Brazoria County, transferred to the Trans-Mississippi Department.

Henry W. Grabber, Austin County, wounded in Kentucky, taken prisoner and retained.

S. Girard, Brazoria County, discharged at Corinth, Miss.

T. Groce, Austin County, went off with General Wharton.

Gared Groce, Austin County, promoted to Lieutenant on Wharton's staff and came to Texas.

A. Garland, Brazoria County, taken prisoner.

Dr. J. W. Gullick, Washington County, appointed Surgeon of regiment by Colonel Harrison.

Arthur Haynes, Calhoun County, captured in Tennessee.

D. Hardeman, Matagorda County, left with Wharton by request of War Department.

A. F. Hammond, Washington County, present.

J. W. Harper, Austin County, died in 1866 from effects of the war.

John W. Hill, Brazoria County, transferred.

Joseph Hageman, Harris County, discharged in 1862.

J. S. Hubbard, Calhoun County, captured in South Carolina in 1865.

A. J. Harris, Washington County.

J. Coffee Harris, Washington County.

D. Harris, Austin County, discharged by substitution.

J. P. Harris, Colorado County, wounded at Waynesboro, Ga.

J. P. Hutchinson, Calhoun County, went with Wharton.

R. Howell, Brazoria County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., and re-enlisted in 1865.

C. Haynes, Calhoun County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky.

M. A. Harvey, Austin County, promoted to General Martin's staff.

A. C. Jones, Matagorda County, Color Sergeant, wounded November, 1863, and died in 1868 from effects of wound.

Andrew Jackson, Brazoria County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky., in 1862.

John Jackson, Brazoria, discharged at Woodburn, Ky.

W. R. Jefferson, Austin County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky.; was in hospital seven months.

J. T. Joyce, Austin County, wounded in a forlorn hope carrying a dispatch; discharged and died.

Thomas M. Jack, Galveston, Texas, promoted to General Albert Sidney Johnston's staff.

Tom King, Murfreesboro, Tenn., killed at Marietta, Ga., June, 1864.

C. B. Lewis, Washington County, furloughed and killed with General Wharton at Yellow Bayou, in 1864.

Louie LeGierce, Calhoun County, captured at Franklin, Tenn., killed at Columbus, Texas, in 1876.

T. J. Levine, Harris County, present.

Caynean McLeod, Galveston.

T. A. Manor, Brazoria County.

Leander McNeill, Brazoria County.

Benjamin McNeill, Brazoria County, died at Oakland Station, Ky.

Pleasant McNeill, Brazoria County, died near Shelbyville, Tenn.

C. F. Maxey, Walker County, died in Unionville, Tenn.

S. C. McBroom, Wharton County, died December 4th, 1875.

A. McDonald, Harris County, died in Nolansville, Tenn.

D. Eugene Munger, Austin County, killed at Bentonville, N. C., March 21st, 1865.

D. McCann, Austin County, killed at Murfreesboro July 13th, 1862.

N. Monks, Austin County, killed at Murfreesboro July 13th, 1862.

R. Morris, Austin County, killed at Hempstead July, 1879, by R. Loggins.

John McIver, Tennessee, wounded at Murfreesboro December 31st, 1863.

W. P. Massenburg, Brazoria County, discharged at Corinth, Miss., March, 1862.

Ed. Moore, Brazoria County.

J. A. McKenzie, Brazoria County, discharged; afterwards served as a Congressman from Kentucky.

H. Manidue, Brazoria County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky., in 1862.

R. M. McKay, Harris County, elected Captain of company in 1862.

Dan McPhail, Washington County, present.

J. M. Onions, Washington County, discharged on account of his eyes in East Tennessee August, 1862.

W. S. Oldham, Washington County, promoted to 1st Lieutenant on General Maxey's staff.

Virgil H. Phelps, Brazoria County, present.

Ben C. Polk, Leon County, Regimental Bugler, a fearless man, killed in 1876.

James Patterson, Tennessee, killed at Murfreesboro December 31st, 1862.

William Pickett, Brazoria County, died in Louisiana September, 1861.

Mat. Roberts, Brazoria County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1862.

Jesse Rice, Austin County, discharged in Bowling Green, Ky., in 1862.

Robert Rugely, Matagorda County, present.

J. D. Rugely, Matagorda County, killed at Woodbury, Tenn., September, 1862.

Vic. W. Rogers, Harris County, discharged August 18th, 1862.

T. S. Rennan, Austin County, present.

William F. Smith, Brazoria County, present.

Joe Stewart, Austin County, died at Atlanta, Ga.

W. S. Stewart, Washington County, present.

F. Stansbury, Austin County, died in Nashville, Tenn., February, 1862.

James Staton, Brazoria County, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

W. L. Springfield, Austin County, wounded at Noonan, Ga.

E. B. Thomas, Galveston, wounded at Murfreesboro December 31st, 1863.

E. Thomas, Galveston, discharged in 1862.

O. Tilmon, Austin County, promoted to Lieutenant in White's Battery.

S. Tillerry, Washington County, discharged at Murfreesboro in November, 1862.

J. Trumbull, Washington County, detached on Engineers Corps.

E. R. Terrell, Harris County, one of Shannon's effective scouts.

Mat. Talbott, Matagorda County, discharged.

Theo. K. Thompson, Galveston, present.

William Ward, Brazoria County, killed at Murfreesboro December 31st, 1862.

W. R. Webb, Austin County, captured near Somerville, Ga.

J. King White, Austin County, killed while on scouting duty in North Carolina March 26th, 1865.

John W. Wiggins, Matagorda County, wounded, captured and paroled at Waynesboro, Ga.

I. Wilson, Brazoria County, discharged, rejoined and again discharged.

I. G. Wilson, Wharton County.

Ben F. Weems, Brazoria County, promoted to Captain. Adjutant to Wharton; wounded at Murfreesboro in 1862.

Joe Walker, Matagorda County, transferred to Company G at Bowling Green, Ky.

Joseph Yearby, Brazoria County, captured and paroled in Tennessee, now dead.

A. Hendricks, Austin County, died in prison at Camp Chase in 1863.

W. B. Hardee, Alabama, son of General Hardee, killed at Bentonville, N. C., March 21st, 1865.

J. C. Hungerford, Alabama.

T. A. Hicks, Tennessee.

COMPANY C.

M. L. Evans, Captain, Gonzales County, died of wounds at Perryville, Ky., October 18th, 1862; acting Major at the time.

A. M. Shannon, 1st Lieutenant, Karnes County, promoted to Captain October 18th, 1862; afterwards commanded efficient scouts; promoted to Colonel, commanding special scouts and secret service February 8th, 1865.

James M. Dunn, 2nd Lieutenant, Karnes County, resigned and died at Decatur, Alabama, February, 1863.

J. W. Baylor, Jr., 2nd Lieutenant, Karnes County, promoted to 2nd Lieutenant, in 1863, now dead.

B. F. Batchelor, 1st Sergeant, Gonzales County, promoted to 1st Lieutenant, and killed at Rome, Ga., October 13th, 1862.

Daniel L. Russell, 2nd Sergeant, Fayette County, prisoner.

T. J. Oliver, 3rd Sergeant, Limestone County, present.

L. H. Barlow, 4th Sergeant, Dallas County.

A. D. Walker, 1st Corporal, Gonzales County, present.

S. M. Lowery, 2nd Corporal, Karnes County, dead.

G. Kibbe, 3rd Corporal, Bee County, dead.

H. C. Evans, 4th Corporal, Gonzales County, present.

B. F. Burris, 5th Corporal, Karnes County, present.

PRIVATES.

John Aycock, Falls County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky.

W. S. J. Adams, Dallas County.

Geo. W. Archer, Limestone County, secret service, valuable scout, captured.

E. S. Alley, Fayette County, discharged August, 1862.

V. A. Bond, Limestone County, discharged April, 1862.

J. E. Bartlett, Gonzales County, wounded and fell into the hands of the enemy at Atlanta, Ga.

R. W. Brooks, Limestone County.

Thomas S. Burney, Limestone County, present.

James Baker, Fort Bliss, Texas.

W. R. Brooks, Limestone County, discharged August, 1862.

James A. Baker, Gonzales County, discharged and died at Nashville in 1862.

John Carlton, Karnes County, discharged and died at Franklin in 1862.

A. Dunn, Karnes County, discharged and died at Corinth in 1862.

W. H. Drumgoole, Karnes County, died of wounds received at Chickamauga in 1863.

J. B. Davis, Williamson County, wounded at Waynesboro, Ga.

Isom Davis, Karnes County, discharged at Corinth in 1862, now dead.

H. F. Dunn, Karnes County, died at Nashville.

A. J. Dunn, Karnes County, discharged November, 1861, at Helena.

G. L. Eslinger, Fayette County.

Dr. A. D. Evans, Gonzales County, discharged November, 1861.

Jacob Chesney, Gonzales County, discharged April, 1862.

W. H. H. Forester, Gonzales County, left in the hands of the Federals in 1862, and never heard of again.

Samuel Garrett, Fort Bliss, Texas, killed in White County, Tenn., in 1864.

W. F. Glasgow, Fayette County, present.

J. W. Glasgow, Fayette County, present.

N. W. Grant, Limestone County, discharged November 1st, 1862.

N. Holt, Limestone County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1862.

W. N. Hodge, Fayette County, present.

J. C. Johnson, Fayette County, present.

Phil. Hale, Fayette County, discharged November, 1861.

G. B. Kennedy, Limestone County, wounded at Murfreesboro December, 1863.

F. G. Kennedy, Limestone County, wounded at Murfreesboro, September, 1863.

P. L. Kendall, Limestone County.

J. C. Kirkeir, Fort Bliss, Texas, wounded at Chickamauga.

Isaac Lane, Gonzales County, discharged at Chattanooga June, 1862.

Michael Lomax, Gonzales County, discharged at Nashville in 1861.

W. A. Lynch, Limestone County, received two wounds same day near Rome, Ga.

C. W. Love, Limestone County, died at Farmington, Tenn., October 6th, 1863.

John Latimer, Gonzales County, discharged at Corinth, rejoined August, 1862, and wounded at Chickamauga.

J. M. Lynch, Limestone County, discharged at Shiloh April 10, 1862.

Charles H. C. Maigne, Colorado County, captured in Kentucky, exchanged and made boss saddler.

J. W. Moore, Karnes County.

James Magill, Washington County.

James McCullum, Bee County, discharged at Corinth, Miss., now dead.

W. F. Moore, Bee County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., and died.

M. McGuyre, Bee County, discharged at Shiloh April 10th, 1862.

W. H. Owens, Sr., Limestone County, discharged at Corinth.

W. H. Owens, Jr., Limestone County, present.

H. M. O'Neill, Limestone County, died at Franklin, Tenn., November, 1861.

J. D. Pace, Karnes County, wounded at Murfreesboro in 1862; also at Farmersville, Tenn.; captured in Georgia.

E. J. Pitts, Gonzales County, the regimental poet, present.

Bulger Peebles, Limestone County; died at Mexia in 1869.

Uriah Posey, Limestone County.

Wm. M. Perry, Limestone County.

J. C. Pybus, Franklin, Alabama, a good soldier, wounded twice.

G. W. Posey, Limestone County, discharged and died.

J. M. Rogers, Limestone County, discharged at Shiloh.

Henry Rennick, Fort Bliss, Texas.

R. Scarbora, Gonzales County, killed at Murfreesboro July, 1862, under Forrest.

W. H. Shannon, Karnes County, killed at McMinnville, Tenn., October, 1863.

Sol. K. Scruggs, Limestone County, promoted to Lieutenant in 1863.

W. M. Slaughter, killed in Tennessee March, 1864.

C. K. Stribbling, Fort Griffin, Texas, promoted to 1st Sergeant, wounded at Stockade near Manchester, Tenn.

J. E. Thornton, Limestone County, wounded at McMinnville in 1862, always on hand.

Ed. Tatum, Bee County, died in Columbia, Tenn., in 1861.

Ed. Taft, Colorado County, discharged in April, 1862.

B. Stanard, Colorado County, discharged April, 1862.

M. V. Wright, Bee County, killed at Chickamauga.

Walter S. Woods, Limestone County, wounded at Shiloh, good soldier, now dead.

Willie Terry, Limestone County, captured and paroled.

John Wilson, discharged early.

John G. Wheeler, discharged early; joined Hood's Brigade and lost an arm.

James Woodley, Lavaca County, discharged and died.

R. A. Byler, Fayette County, discharged in 1862.

J. T. Campbell, Fayette County, discharged in January, 1862.

G. W. Stubblefield, Austin County, discharged in Kentucky in 1861.

Geo. Q. Turner, discharged, rejoined and died; good soldier.

Joseph Mangum, Gonzales County, discharged early.

John McDonald, Gonzales County, discharged early.

F. M. Adams, discharged early.

James Davis, killed while on scouting duty in Georgia.

COMPANY D.

Steven C. Ferrill, Captain, Bastrop County, promoted Major and Lieutenant Colonel, resigned in May, 1861, and died in Fayette County November 14th, 1868.

Charles Leroy Morgan, 1st Lieutenant, Bastrop County, resigned in September, 1861, came home and commanded a regiment in the Trans-Mississippi Department.

J. W. Burdett, 2nd Lieutenant, Travis County, resigned June, 1862, and died.

W. R. Doak, 3rd Lieutenant, Burleson County, present.

G. M. Decherd, 1st Lieutenant, Burleson County, elected 2nd Lieutenant April, 1862, and 1st Lieutenant and Adjutant General on Harrison's staff.

R. T. Hell, 2nd Sergeant, Bastrop County, captured twice and once wounded.

J. Milam Duty, 3rd Sergeant, Travis County, discharged January, 1862.

J. H. Morgan, 4th Sergeant, Bastrop County, died in Nashville in 1861.

J. B. Cowen, 5th Sergeant, Bastrop County, died in Bastrop in 1867, noble soldier.

G. Bacon Burke, 1st Corporal, Bastrop County, wounded at Cassville.

Ed. Harris, 2nd Corporal, Bastrop County, died in Galatin, Tenn., February, 1862.

J. H. Chessire, 3rd Corporal, Bastrop County, wounded May 9th, 1864, and hand amputated.

Sam Green, 4th Corporal, Bastrop County, died in camp of White's Battery attached.

PRIVATES.

Geo. R. Allen, Bastrop County, always there.

Hugh Allen, Bastrop County, good soldier.

N. J. Allen, Bastrop County, killed at Brickhouse, East Tennessee, December, 1863.

W. N. Albright, Bastrop County, missing in battle, East Tennessee.

C. P. Autry, Bastrop County, discharged November, 1861.

Joseph Bunton, Bastrop County, discharged November, 1861.

Joel Bunton, Bastrop County, discharged November, 1861.

J. P. Billingsly, wounded December, 1862, and killed in 1864 at Atlanta, Ga.

R. Burger, Bastrop County, wounded at Eagleville,

Tenn., March 13th, and again at Moss Creek, East Tennessee, same year.

Jeff W. Burleson, Travis County.

Aaron Burleson, Travis County, wounded; a good flanker; killed in Bastrop County after the war.

J. M. Brannan, Travis County, wounded near Rome, Ga., in 1864.

T. B. Banks, Travis County, no better soldier, formerly of Webberville, Travis County.

W. R. Black, Houston, Harris County, elected Brevet 2nd Lieutenant December, 1862, and wounded at Knoxville November 17th, 1863, now dead.

A. J. Burleson, Travis County, discharged December, 1861.

Elisha W. Black, Bastrop County, died at Nashville, Tenn., February, 1862.

W. W. Beall, Bastrop County, first man killed at Woodsonville, Ky., December 17th, 1861.

F. A. Bott, Travis County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., early.

J. W. Conner, Bastrop County, a good one.

John M. Claiborne, Travis County, appointed Sergeant Major in 1862, and Adjutant December 31st, 1862, wounded three times.

W. H. Caldwell, Bastrop County, badly wounded September 7th, 1864.

C. G. Caldwell, Bastrop County, discharged.

F. H. Corbell, Caldwell County.

Dave S. Combs, Hays County, present.

Volney Catron, Travis County, present.

J. B. Campbell, Bastrop County, taken prisoner.

John Crane, Bastrop County, killed at Shiloh April 6th, 1862.

D. A. Doty, Bastrop County, present.

W. R. Davis, Travis County, present.

E. S. Dodd, Travis County, hung by Federals unjustly as a spy at Knoxville, Tenn., June, 1864.

J. Davidson, Travis County, died at Bowling Green, Ky., in December, 1861.

Sigman Fredberger, Bastrop County, wounded at Murfreesboro December 22nd, 1862, and died of wounds.

Joe R. Ford, Travis County, wounded; since died in Falls County.

John A. Gage, Bastrop County, killed at Aiken, S. C., February 12th, 1865.

Tom A. Gill, Bastrop County, one of the best soldiers in the regiment.

Perry Green, Burleson County, transferred to White's Battery, attached.

James H. Galt, Bastrop County, present.

B. Campbell Giles, Travis County, present.

L. B. Giles, Travis County, wounded at Woodsonville December, 1861.

J. L. Garth, Bastrop County, appointed Hospital Steward.

L. L. Giles, Travis County, killed at Woodsonville December 17th, 1861.

F. M. Hill, Travis County, died November, 1861.

J. W. Hill, Bastrop County, present.

R. E. Hill, Bastrop County, appointed Assistant Surgeon October, 1861.

D. O. Hill, Bastrop County, present.

T. A. W. Hill, Bastrop County, present.

E. R. Hopper, Bastrop County, present.

J. R. Henry, Travis County, killed at Jackson, Alabama October, 1864.

Wayne Hamilton, Travis County, killed at Murfreesboro December, 1862.

Thomas Hart, Bastrop County, killed at Nashville October, 1861, first man to die.

E. D. Hill, Bastrop County, transferred from Grandberry's Brigade.

Isaac V. Jones, Travis County, present.

Wm. J. Hardee, killed at Bentonville March 1st, 1865.

C. Kyle, Hays County, present.

William Kyle, Hays County, present.

A. J. Kyle, Hays County, present.

P. R. Kyle, Hays County, wounded at Aiken, S. C., September, 1861.

Ferg. Kyle, Hays County, elected 1st Lieutenant January 2nd, promoted to Captain November, 1862.

P. R. Kennedy, Bastrop County, killed at Waynesboro, N. C., November, 1864.

E. R. Kennedy, Bastrop County, present.

Frank Loftin, Bastrop County, killed at Woodsonville December 17th, 1861, second man killed.

A. T. Logan, Travis County, appointed Orderly Sergeant June, 1862, accidentally wounded and discharged.

Robert Lewis, Bastrop County, died January, 1862.

W. H. Lovell, Hays County, died at Nashville December, 1862.

Woods S. Miller, Bastrop County, present.

Geo. Beardy Miller, Burleson County, wounded at Shiloh April 6th, 1862; the best.

W. C. Moore, Burleson County, present.

P. M. Mullen, Burleson County, wounded at Murfreesboro December 31st, 1862, and killed July 2nd, 1864.

James McArthur, Travis County, wounded at Waynesboro, Ga., in 1864.

F. W. McGuire, Washington County, present.

Geo. T. McGehee, Hays County, wounded at Aiken, S. C., February 12, 1862.

James F. McGuire, Washington County, present.

Charles McGehee, Hays County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1862.

J. Milt Morin, Burleson County, discharged by substitution in April, 1862.

Jeff Miller, Travis County.

J. W. Neely, Bastrop County, Hospital Surgeon, resides in Kentucky.

William Nicholson, Bastrop County, wounded December 26th, 1863; killed near Rome, Ga., October 13, 1864.

D. D. Nunn, Bastrop County, wounded and subsequently killed at Waynesboro, Ga., in November, 1864.

James T. Nolan, Bastrop County, present.

James Nicholson, Bastrop County, discharged at Bowling Green.

T. B. Peterson, Bastrop County, present.

Charles Pellam, Travis County, killed near Cleveland, Tenn., May 9th, 1864; no superior.

J. C. Pickle, Travis County, present.

T. B. Poe, Travis County, executed wrongly as a spy.

Sam Piper, Travis County, present; a good one.

T. J. Potts, Bastrop County, appointed Assistant Surgeon.

Roland Rucker, Travis County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1862.

Jesse Roe, Travis County, died at Gallatin, Tenn., November, 1861.

W. P. Rice, Bastrop County, discharged in 1862.

Joe B. Rogers, Travis County, present.

T. Mason Rector, Bastrop County, present.

John B. Rector, Bastrop County, present.

Kenner K. Rector, Bastrop County, wounded at Murfreesboro December 31st, and subsequently discharged.

Dr. J. M. Royston, Bastrop County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

Richard Royston, Bastrop County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

W. H. Roberts, Travis County, discharged by substitution in 1862; since deceased.

W. B. Sayers, Bastrop County, appointed Sergeant Major, Adjutant and Inspector General, wounded at Johnsonville, N. C., March 10th, 1865.

Sam H. Screws, Bastrop County, killed in battle 1864.

W. A. Standifer, Bastrop County, transferred to White's Battery, attached.

W. Cicero Smith, Bastrop County, captured in East Tennessee.

M. Smith, Bastrop County.

C. W. Stone, Travis County, present.

R. B. Shipp, Bastrop County, transferred to post duty.

W. Oliver, Bastrop County, wounded at Marietta, Ga., and killed near Sparta, Tenn.

William Tarrant Simms, Bastrop County, present.

Reuben Slaughter, Caldwell County, wounded in battle, and afterwards killed on his way home.

Reuben Stroud, Bastrop County, transferred from 18th Texas Cavalry March, 1863.

A. K. Stewart, Burleson County, discharged January, 1861.

D. P. Smith, Bastrop County, died November, 1861, at Bowling Green, Ky.

M. E. Thomas, Austin, Texas, transferred to White's Battery.

T. J. Taylor, Bastrop County, present.

M. H. Thomas, Burleson County, discharged at Bowling Green Ky., in 1862.

T. J. Varden, Bastrop County, present.

Felix Vaughan, Bastrop County, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

Cal. Walton, Bastrop County, present.

J. S. Wynn, Burleson County, killed at Buckhead Church November, 1863.

Walker W. Wheeler, Austin County, transferred by promotion to the Trans-Mississippi Department, and killed at Brenham, Texas, in 1867.

Paul J. Watkins, Hays County, wounded at Greenville, Georgia, in 1864.

Sam M. Watkins, Hays County, present.

Jerry Wilkins, Bastrop County, discharged in Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

John Washington, Travis County, wounded at Shiloh, exchanged and discharged.

Joseph Young, Bastrop County, discharged April, 1862, and died.

G. B. Zimpleman, Travis County, wounded July, 1861, and prisoner of war.

COMPANY E.

L. N. Rayburn, Captain, Gonzales County, wounded at Shiloh in 1862, promoted to Major and resigned.

W. L. Foster, 1st Lieutenant, Gonzales County, resigned in September, 1861.

A. T. Storey, 2nd Lieutenant, died of wounds received at Shiloh April 8th, 1862.

P. H. Coe, 3rd Lieutenant, Gonzales County, resigned in September, 1861.

M. A. Hunter, 1st Sergeant, Gonzales County, wounded at Danbridge, Tenn., September, 1864.

C. C. Littlefield, 3rd Sergeant, Gonzales County, elected 2nd Lieutenant and promoted to 1st Lieutenant.

C. E. Littlefield, 4th Sergeant, Gonzales County, wounded severely at Manchester, Tenn., September, 1862, and promoted to 2nd Lieutenant.

W. W. Wells, 1st Corporal, Gonzales County, wounded at Knoxville September, 1863, and permanently disabled in the arm; elected 2nd Lieutenant.

D. D. Mitchell, 5th Corporal, Gonzales County, wounded at Bardstown, Ky., September, 1862, and died.

J. M. Hunt, 3rd Corporal, Gonzales County, discharged at Corinth April, 1862.

PRIVATES.

William Augustine, De Witt County, died in hospital at Nashville, Tenn., in 1861.

N. Ames, De Witt County, died.

A. T. Avery, De Witt County, killed at Fort Donaldson January 30, 1863.

N. H. Baldwin, Gonzales County, promoted to Sergeant and transferred to Mississippi regiment in 1861.

W. B. F. Bird, Gonzales County, dead.

Sim R. Bruce, 4th Corporal, Gonzales County, wounded severely at Prairieville, Ky.

G. H. Bruce, Gonzales County, wounded near Shelbyville, Tenn., in 1863.

G. W. Baker, Gonzales County, dead.

J. M. Bronnson, Gonzales County, wounded at Shiloh September 8th, 1862, appointed Quartermaster Sergeant.

T. J. Bronnson, De Witt County, discharged April 8, 1862.

A. T. Browning, De Witt County, wounded at Bentonville, N. C., in 1865.

J. T. Batton, 2nd Corporal, De Witt County.

J. A. Brace, De Witt County, wounded while bearing dispatches to Bragg from Wheeler at Fort Donaldson in 1863.

W. H. Chaplin, De Witt County, promoted to Lieutenant of artillery.

M. Contraros, native of Mexico, De Witt County, severely wounded at Shiloh 6th of April, and discharged.

J. P. Caldwell.

A. Compton.

S. Chenault, present.

M. Cassidy, De Witt County, wounded July 4th, 1863, at Cumberland Mountain, Tenn.

F. D. Calhoun, De Witt County, captured at McMinnville September, 1863.

J. G. Collison, De Witt County, wounded severely at Cumberland Mountain July 4, 1863.

Hays A. Carson, De Witt County, present.

J. F. Colter, De Witt County, transferred to company I, and retransferred to E.

G. W. Cuppett, De Witt County, discharged.

William Davis, De Witt County, killed in Middle Tennessee in 1864.

R. S. Davis, De Witt County, killed in White County, Tenn., in 1864.

A. J. Duren, De Witt County, killed at Murfreesboro, Tenn., July 3rd, 1862.

W. F. Dickey, De Witt County.

W. F. Floyd, De Witt County.

R. H. Floyd, De Witt County.

W. H. Fisher, De Witt County, appointed Sergeant Major December 31st, 1863.

W. R. Friend, elected Lieutenant May, 1862, wounded at Macon, Ga., November 22nd, 1864.

C. C. Floyd, discharged December, 1861.

G. W. Fogg, died in Nashville December 2nd, 1861.

W. T. Fletcher, transferred from 5th Texas Infantry March, 1864.

J. L. W. Gibson, wounded at Murfreesboro September 29, 1862, killed near Southern University July 4, 1863.

W. P. Gwynn, wounded at Murfreesboro.

W. D. Giddings, died at Nashville November 6, 1861.

R. L. Gill, discharged June 6, 1862.

J. M. Hunter.

W. P. Hall, wounded at Bentonville March 20th, 1865.

J. T. Hays.

T. B. Hill, sent to the hospital in September, 1862, and never heard from.

E. T. Hendley, died at LaGrange, Texas, September, 1865.

D. T. Hall, dead.

M. D. L. Hargrove, discharged in June, 1862.

J. M. Kirkland, present.

T. B. Key, 2nd Sergeant, died in North Alabama June 1862.

N. B. Kay, discharged in January, 1862.

J. W. Littlefield, badly wounded at Shiloh April 7th, 1862.

Robert Littlefield.

J. E. Lynch, wounded three times while scouting in 1864; killed near Raleigh, N. C., in April, 1865; last man killed.

William Locke.

W. P. McGarrity, captured and escaped.

John W. McGarrity, died in hospital November 8th, 1861.

C. M. McGarrity, died in September, 1862.

G. H. G. May, wounded at Bentonville, N. C., in 1865.

N. Michell, enlisted in 1861.

A. H. McClure, elected Lieutenant on December 25, 1862, at Nolansville Tenn.

W. T. Mahon.

I. Metz, discharged December, 1861.

S. S. Morris, discharged June, 1862.

A. R. Neill, discharged June 12, 1862.

Ferd Nolke.

R. Newcomb.

J. T. Nixon, discharged in December, 1861.

Uriah Peoples, from Company B, 2nd Tennessee Infantry.

D. N. Patterson.

D. C. Price.

J. J. Pitkin.

H. Ranft, Discharged January, 1862.

J. R. Roberts.

T. S. Richards, died of wounds received at Jonesboro in 1865.

A. H. Robinson, furloughed.

L. Squires, died at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

Glen W. Shuler, wounded severely at Murfreesboro in 1863 and discharged.

Geo. W. Shuler.

D. B. Shuler, wounded at Moss Creek December, 1863.

H. Shuler, discharged in September, 1862.

T. S. Sanson.

M. Sullivan.

A. H. Sample, discharged October, 1862.

J. M. Sample, wounded at Shiloh April 6th, 1862; twice same day at Cassville, Ga., 1864.

C. M. Sherman, captured July 4th, 1864.

W. A. Smith, discharged February, 1862.

R. McE. Ware, transferred to Gano's Brigade in 1862.

L. T. Ward, discharged January 8, 1862.

H. M. Tramwell.

R. E. Tramwell.

H. C. Thomas, killed at Moss Creek January 12, 1864.

E. P. Ward, absent on limited furlough, since enlisted.

J. G. York, killed in White County, Tenn.

J. L. White, promoted to Lieutenant and Captain, and wounded at McMinnville in 1864.

J. M. Wheat, promoted to Commissary Sergeant.

R. M. Wallace, captured at Moss Creek January, 1864.

G. A. W. Wright, wounded at Beardstown, Ky., October 4, 1862, and died.

Geo. W. White, discharged January, 1862.

COMPANY F.

L. M. Stroble, Captain, Fort Bend County, resigned December 1st, 1861; died at LaGrange, Texas, in 1872.

W. R. John, 1st Lieutenant, Fayette County, promoted to Captain June, 1862, wounded September 17th, 1863, at Gorsbyville, Ga., and Bentonville, N. C., in November, 1865.

Phoecian Tate, 2nd Lieutenant, Fayette County, resigned in May, 1862.

W. N. Tate, 3rd Lieutenant, Fayette County, resigned in December, 1861.

A. J. Murray, 1st Sergeant, Fayette County, promoted to Lieutenant July, 1862, absent at close of war.

V. T. Coop, 2nd Sergeant, Fayette County, discharged December, 1861.

C. D. Barnett, 3rd Sergeant, Fayette County, promoted to 1st Sergeant, wounded at Murfreesboro July, 1862, and at Waynesboro also.

J. T. Culpepper, 4th Sergeant, Lavaca County, wounded at Shiloh in 1862, and in East Tennessee in 1863, and captured, but escaped in 1865.

A. G. Ledbetter, 1st Corporal, Fayette County, wounded at Shiloh and at Farmington, Tenn.

B. E. Joiner, 2nd Corporal, Fayette County, promoted to 3rd Lieutenant.

L. Watson, 3rd Corporal, Lavaca County, died in prison at Rock Island, Ill.; was captured October, 1863, in Sequatchie Valley.

J. W. Roab, 4th Corporal, Fayette County, wounded in East Tennessee.

PRIVATES.

S. L. Anderson, Fayette County, discharged July, 1862.

J. H. Andrews, Colorado County, left in hospital on the field of Shiloh mortally wounded.

O. H. Alexander, Fayette County, present.

P. H. Arnold, Lavaca County.

J. B. Allen.

B. F. Burke, Fayette County, wounded at Chickamauga.

Henry Brown, Bugler, Fayette County, wounded at Nolansville, Tenn.

T. C. Bennette, Fayette County, wounded at Grisbyville.

A. M. Beall, Lavaca County.

Robert Bracey, Austin County, transferred to Company B.

J. K. P. Blackburn, Lavaca County, promoted to Lieutenant; wounded at Farmington October 6th, 1863.

H. G. Burton, Fayette County, died in hospital July, 1862.

L. K. Crockett, Fayette County.

R. R. Crockett, Fayette County, discharged February, 1862.

J. E. Carlton, Colorado County, present.

B. T. Craft, Fayette County.

G. L. Chandler, Fayette County, wounded at Farmington October 6th, 1863.

S. G. Clark, Colorado County, killed at Tyrrell Springs in 1862.

M. P. Cheatem, Fayette County, discharged December, 1861.

J. A. Cook, Fayette County, discharged January, 1862.

S. B. Dehart, Colorado County, discharged January, 1862.

W. E. Drisdale, Fayette County, wounded at Manchester August 26th, 1862.

C. M. Dunneway, Lavaca County, present.

Charles Dirr, Fayette County, present.

S. C. Drake, Colorado County, transferred to White's Battery.

E. H. Emeh, Fayette County, died November 4th, 1861, at Bowling Green, Ky.

William T. Fitz, Fayette County, died in Colorado in 1876.

J. R. Flewelyn, Lavaca County, killed the first Federal that was killed by the regiment.

L. P. Gordon-Farrier, Fayette County, present.

S. A. Green, Lavaca County, wounded at Murfreesboro December 29th, 1862.

Sam H. Grover, Fayette County, killed in private difficulty in East Tennessee.

T. J. Groce, Colorado County, present.

G. L. Gwynn, Fayette County, died at Atlanta, Ga., in 1862:

C. Howard, Lavaca County, transferred to Company I.

John Humphrey, Lavaca County, discharged.

J. L. Harris, Fayette County, died at Decatur, Alabama, February, 1862.

J. H. Holman, Fayette County, present.

J. G. Haynie, Fayette County, captured at Columbia, S. C., 1861, and drowned at Saluria, S. C., bridge in 1865.

J. P. Hutchings, Fayette County; went to Brazil in 1866.

A. P. Harcourt, Fayette County.

W. H. Harris, Lavaca County, present.

F. F. Hooper, Austin County, present.

O. E. Herbert, Colorado County, captured in Middle Tennessee, and sent to Texas.

J. R. Hester, Colorado County, present.

W. J. Hill, Fayette County, discharged April 12, 1862.

J. D. Hunt, Fayette County, discharged December, 1861.

M. G. Harbour, Fayette County, died in Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

Nat. Holman, Fayette County, transferred from Wall's Legion.

C. K. Izard, Fayette County, died in Athens, Ga., April, 1864.

A. Jones, Lavaca County, died in Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

R. A. Jarmon, Fayette County, captured in Kentucky campaign.

S. L. Jarmon, Fayette County, wounded at Farmington October 6, 1863.

R. H. Jones, Lavaca County, present.

J. C. Justice, Fayette County; no better soldier.

J. F. Jenkins, Colorado County.

T. B. Jones, Fayette County, discharged January, 1862.

C. B. Jones, Lavaca County, discharged at Bowling Green January, 1862.

Redding Jones, Jackson County, discharged December, 1861.

E. Koyler, Lavaca County, killed in East Tennessee.

R. Kuykendall, Lavaca County, died at Nashville December, 1861.

P. P. Kirk, Lavaca County, discharged January, 1862.

Wm. M. Lewis, Fayette County, present.

B. P. Lewis, Lavaca County, discharged February, 1862.

F. Lindenburg, Lavaca County, wounded at Aiken February 11th, 1865.

J. B. Long, Fayette County, discharged April, 1862.

H. C. Middlebrook, Lavaca County, discharged December 16th, 1861.

W. H. Middlebrook, Fayette County, present.

J. H. McCreary, Fayette County.

W. S. Morton, Colorado County.

D. A. McGonigil, Lavaca County, wounded severely and discharged September, 1862.

W. E. McClellan, Fayette County, elected Lieutenant October, 1861, and resigned.

T. G. Mercer, Fayette County, died at Bowling Green November, 1861.

J. H. Moore, Fayette County.

R. L. Nevill, Fayette County, transferred to White's Battery.

W. N. A. Norton, Fayette County; present.

S. B. Noble, Lavaca County; always on hand.

W. N. Penn, Fayette County, discharged December, 1861.

I. P. Phillips, Fayette County, died in Nashville in 1861.

J. E. Priest, Fayette County, died at Oakland, Ky., December, 1861.

D. C. Payne, Lavaca County, died at Nashville, November, 1861.

S. C. Patten, Fayette County, captured in East Tennessee in 1864, and never exchanged.

J. W. Pope, Fayette County, wounded at Aiken, S. C., February 11, 1865.

James T. Pettus, Colorado County, killed at Manchester August 29th, 1862.

A. Pontin, Lavaca County, died at Atlanta, Ga., November, 1862.

N. C. Reeves, Fayette County, present.

W. B. Reeves, Fayette County, discharged December, 1861.

M. H. Sanders, Fayette County.

J. H. Stevenson, Fayette County.

S. A. Street, Fayette County, killed while on scouting duty at Marietta, Ga.

C. O. Simpson, Fayette County, wounded at Cumberland Mountain July 4th, 1863.

W. B. Simpson, Lavaca County.

W. S. Scallum, Fayette County, died in 1862.

A. G. Seals, Lavaca County, died at Nashville November, 1861.

J. R. Stewart, Fayette County, discharged.

W. L. Thornton, Fayette County, wounded at Manchester, Tenn., also at Stockade; killed in pursuit of McCook's raid, July, 1864.

S. G. Thigpen, Lavaca County, present.

S. R. Tutwiler, Fayette County, wounded at Murfreesboro December 29, 1862, Manchester August 29, 1863; discharged in consequence.

Henry Terrell, Colorado County, wounded in Stoneman's raid, July, 1864, and in East Tennessee, December, 1864.

W. Wallace, Fayette County.

S. R. Woodward, Fayette County.

W. S. White, Fayette County, killed at Bentonville, N. C., March, 1865.

D. R. Watson, Lavaca County, captured October, 1863, and died in prison.

W. J. Ware, Lavaca County, died in Bowling Green November, 1861.

T. H. Wood, Montgomery County, discharged November, 1862.

J. W. Yarborough, Fayette County, died at Nashville December, 1861.

COMPANY G.

W. Y. Houston, Captain, killed August 9th, 1862.

W. M. Ford, 1st Lieutenant, Bexar County.

William Ellis, 3rd Lieutenant, killed at Murfreesboro
December, 1862.

M. Mitchell, 2nd Lieutenant, died in Nashville, Tenn.,
December, 1861.

D. F. Lilley, 1st Sergeant.

Pue Arthur, 2nd Sergeant, promoted to Lieutenant in
White's Battery; killed at Bandera, Texas, in 1880.

J. M. Tanquary, promoted to 4th Sergeant.

J. B. Brisco, promoted to 2nd Lieutenant.

E. R. Tyler, 1st Corporal.

Thomas H. Barry, 2nd Corporal.

William H. Jenkins, 3rd Corporal, promoted Commis-
sary of regiment.

T. Drinkard, 4th Corporal, wounded and arm amputat-
ed; discharged August 9, 1863.

PRIVATES.

O. Archer.

P. S. Archer.

James Booth, discharged.

A. Bauford, discharged.

W. H. Bigelow, killed May 9th, 1864.

J. B. Briscoe.

J. M. Bennett.

R. D. Burns, promoted to Harrison's staff; died in San
Antonio July, 1872.

A. T. Bradshaw, transferred to Company D.

D. J. Blair, wounded December, 1862, and discharged.

T. H. Barrett, wounded October, 1864.

Louis Borho, present.

E. C. Barker, discharged January, 1862.

Thomas Bowles, Travis County.

James Barker, died in hospital at Nashville December, 1861.

Dan Bradshaw, discharged April, 1862.

L. Campbell, promoted February, 1862.

P. Childress, captured in East Tennessee in 1864, and drowned in attempting to save a lady in August, 1872.

R. B. Cotton.

S. Colman, transferred by substitution in April, 1862.

Jeptha Cotton, discharged January, 1862.

T. A. Devinne, company blacksmith.

James English, killed near Fayetteville, N. C., on February 8th, 1865.

James Ferrell.

James Gorman, discharged on account of youth.

William Gainer, discharged December, 1861.

Ed. P. Gallagher, transferred to Mobile light artillery April 8, 1862.

William Hagwin, killed May 9th, 1864.

J. C. Hagwin.

J. M. Howell.

D. H. Houston, Assistant Regimental Surgeon.

R. C. Houston, transferred to Rogers' scouts.

Levi Humphreys, died at Bowling Green October, 1861.

Thomas Harris, died at Nashville November, 1861.

Silas Harmon, discharged January, 1862.

J. P. Johnson, wounded and disabled.

ⁿ A. T. Kibbe.

Milo Kimball, captured near Rome, Ga., in 1864.

W. M. Sever.

W. J. Shirkey.

John D. Smith, discharged.

Ed. Tarver, transferred in April, 1862.

John Tynan, transferred to company K.

B. Thomas, killed February 12th, 1865.

J. A. Thomas, present, and a good one.

Hugh L. Tally, wounded August, 1862, and again at Resacca.

Pope Voight, died at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

S. L. Walker, wounded and discharged, captured and died February, 1865.

A. Wells, discharged January, 1862.

A. Waddle, transferred to Starr's Battery.

R. McEware, transferred to General Morgan's Kentucky cavalry.

J. Z. Young.

COMPANY I.

J. G. Jones, Captain, Gonzales County, resigned at Shiloh, April 6th, 1862.

W. H. Harris, 1st Lieutenant, Gonzales County, resigned and died in 1861.

A. D. Harris, 2nd Lieutenant, Gonzales County, promoted Captain May 7, and killed May 9, 1862.

J. H. Paramore, 3rd Lieutenant, Gonzales County, wounded in 1862, promoted Captain June 2nd, 1864, wounded December 30, 1864.

James Harris, 1st Sergeant, Gonzales County, died May, 1862.

Geo. W. Littlefield, 2nd Sergeant, Gonzales County, elected Lieutenant January, 1862, promoted Captain, wounded December 27, and resigned.

Chas. W. Mason, 3rd Sergeant, Gonzales County, killed at Gonzales by William Baltzell in 1869.

Ed. T. Rhodes, 4th Sergeant, Guadalupe County, died in Seguin in 1878.

B. F. Burr, 5th Sergeant, Guadalupe County, killed at Shiloh April 6th, 1864.

W. E. Jones, 1st Corporal, Gonzales County, elected Lieutenant May 7th, 1862; twice wounded; promoted Captain March, 1865.

J. D. Bunting, 2nd Corporal, Gonzales County, taken prisoner at Moss Creek January 12th, 1863.

N. B. Cotton, 3rd Corporal, Gonzales County.

L. A. L. Lampkin, 4th Corporal, Gonzales County; wounded twice, and came home in 1865.

PRIVATES.

G. R. Allen, Gonzales County, wounded at Rome, Ga., in 1864.

S. Andrews, Gonzales County.

Mat. Anderson, Orange County, discharged.

Thomas Balfour, Guadalupe County, discharged.

James Bankhead, Gonzales County.

G. J. Borthe, Jackson County, wounded twice.

J. E. Bowling, Gonzales County, wounded at Shiloh.

Lem Barnett, Bee County.

Wm. H. Baltzell, Caldwell County.

C. M. Bradshaw, Gonzales County, discharged in 1862.

Walter Burke, Gonzales County, discharged in 1862.

James Carlton, San Patricio County, transferred to Company E.

J. J. Colter, Liberty County, promoted to Lieutenant in Cadets C. S. A.

James H. Cobb, Gonzales County, wounded and furloughed.

V. R. Cook, Gonzales County.

R. D. Carpenter, De Witt County, wounded and captured July, 1864.

L. R. Cochran, Gonzales County, killed.

J. R. Cox, Guadalupe County, discharged, loss of voice.

W. M. Campbell, Fayette County.

James Caruthers, McLennan County.

W. H. Babbett, Gonzales County, discharged.

J. L. Dunting, Gonzales County, discharged in 1862.

Robert Gilhorn, Gonzales County, discharged in 1862.

R. H. Ray, Lavaca County, died in Nashville, Tenn.

Henry Thigpen, Lavaca County, died in Nashville, Tenn.

James McKinney, San Patricio County, died in Nashville, Tenn., in 1861.

W. Hutchings, Gonzales County, discharged.

T. P. De Witt, Gonzales County, wounded December, 1862.

J. C. Dilworth, Gonzales County, promoted Lieutenant December 14, 1863, died at Gonzales in 1878.

James Duff, Gonzales County, died at Nashville, Tenn., in 1861.

Henry Donnett, Beaumont, Texas, discharged.

Randolph Fields, Liberty County, discharged.

W. D. Fry, Guadalupe County, promoted and transferred.

W. M. Evans, Gonzales County, discharged in 1862.

T. L. Whetter, Gonzales County, wounded at Shiloh and discharged.

J. D. Gilmore, Gonzales County.

R. B. George, Guadalupe County, killed at Scottsville, Ky., in 1862.

A. Biggs, Caldwell County, discharged at Chattanooga, Tenn., in 1862.

R. S. Simmons, Gonzales County, promoted to Major and Commissary in Wharton's Division.

D. R. Ridley, De Witt County, discharged in 1862.

A. Cupputt, Gonzales County.

J. E. Hardy, Gonzales County, wounded at Murfreesboro December, 1862.

J. F. Paul, Victoria County, prisoner of war.

C. H. Howard, Lavaca County, prisoner and wounded.

W. F. Holcomb, Gonzales County, present.

Daniel Holcomb, Gonzales County, wounded at Cassville, Ga., in 1864.

R. B. Hardeman, San Patricio County.

J. N. Houston, Gonzales County, transferred.

T. Harris, Gonzales County.

William Hall, De Witt County, died in Nashville in 1861.

B. F. Mooring, Gonzales County, died near Bowling Green, Ky.

Edward Thorn, Gonzales County, died in Nashville, Tenn.

Robert Eskridge, Gonzales County, died at Murfreesboro March, 1862.

T. W. Jones, Gonzales County, wounded December 26th, 1863.

William Jackson, Lavaca County.

S. G. Jackson, Jackson County, wounded and discharged.

James E. Stephens, Gonzales County, died at Nashville.

W. F. Stephens, Gonzales County, died at Bowling Green, Ky.

W. H. Kyle, Calhoun County, wounded at Atlanta, Ga., in 1864.

L. M. Kokernot, Gonzales County, present.

W. A. Kendall, Gonzales County.

J. C. Latimer, Gonzales County, prisoner.

H. McKellar, Gonzales County.

John N. Rogers, Gonzales County, discharged.

C. M. McDonald, San Patricio County, elected Lieutenant and resigned, went back as a private; richest man in Laredo.

J. D. McClure, Gonzales County, wounded at Shiloh, and elected Lieutenant.

J. F. Miller, Gonzales County, Commissary Sergeant.

A. S. Miller, Gonzales County, wounded July, 1864.

Banquette Miller, Banquete, Texas.

P. M. McKeller, Gonzales County, wounded and discharged.

T. H. Newbrit, Gonzales County, discharged.

R. G. Pullen, Gonzales County, wounded three times and discharged.

N. B. Polk, Gonzales County, present.

E. M. Stein, Gonzales County, prisoner of war.

H. D. Sullivan, San Patricio County, present.

N. H. Snyder, De Witt County, wounded at Chickamauga and retired.

P. H. Swanson, Gonzales County.

Louis Snyder, De Witt County, died at Nashville, Tenn.

John L. Norwood, Gonzales County.

M. Norwood, Gonzales County, died December, 1861.

Erskine Miller, Guadalupe County, discharged.

T. G. Miller, San Patricio County, discharged.

John F. Tyler, Gonzales County.

J. W. Nelson, Gonzales County, discharged.

A. Sloanecker, Colorado County, discharged.

Robert Taylor, Victoria County, killed at Shiloh.

W. B. Wood, Gonzales County.

William Wroe, Lavaca County, severely wounded at Shiloh.

A. G. Wood, Colorado County, wounded at Chickamauga in 1863.

R. L. Young, Gonzales County, killed in Georgia May 12th, 1862.

COMPANY K.

John G. Walker, Captain, Harris County, wounded at Woodsonville, Ky., in 1861, elected Lieutenant Colonel January, 1862, resigned in September, 1862, died September, 1869.

A. W. Morris, 1st Lieutenant, Montgomery County, wounded at Woodsonville, Ky., resigned and died.

Henry Thomas, 2nd Lieutenant, Harris County, resigned January, 1862.

S. P. Christian, 3rd Lieutenant, Harris County, elected Captain January, 1862, promoted to Major July, 1863, Lieutenant Colonel in 1865, wounded at Farmington, Tenn.

A. W. Hottle, 1st Sergeant, Montgomery County, promoted to Major and Quartermaster; died in Harris County.

No other non-commissioned officers elected.

PRIVATES.

J. D. Alexander, discharged at Bowling Green, Ky.

J. H. Alexander.

H. Bowling, elected Lieutenant January, 1862; resigned May, 1863.

G. Bowling. wounded and discharged.

A. L. Baine, Washington County, killed at Murfreesboro.

J. W. Bowers, Washington County.

J. L. Bowers, Washington County.

H. J. Barfield, Washington County.

T. J. Burroughs, Montgomery County, discharged October, 1863.

R. R. Benjamin, Leon County, killed at Dandridge, East Tennessee, January, 1863.

A. B. Briscoe, Harris County, elected Lieutenant March, 1863.

D. K. Browning, Washington County, killed near Kirkville March 13, 1863.

William Ballantine, Washington County, transferred to infantry.

G. P. Burke, Harris County, company clerk to brigade.

P. Ludgood, Harris County, wounded at Woodsonville, Ky., discharged.

James Bates, Montgomery County, discharged in 1862; died in Texas, 1865.

A. Billingsly, Washington County; discharged in 1862.

Joe Collins, Victoria County, died at Bowling Green, Ky., in 1861.

J. A. Collins, Victoria County, elected Lieutenant December, 1862, wounded and resigned July 13, 1863.

L. S. Crunk, Washington County, wounded at Murfreesboro and discharged.

J. T. Coats, Victoria County, present.

S. T. Conway, Victoria County, wounded at Murfreesboro and discharged.

William Cheney, Washington County, present.

T. Chatham, Montgomery County, present.

W. Chatham, Montgomery County, captured and prisoner of war.

T. C. Clay, Washington County, promoted Ordnance Officer, Harrison's Brigade.

R. N. Condren, Washington County.

Theo. Cofield, Washington County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky., in 1862.

James Cartwright, Washington County, discharged at Woodburn, Ky., in 1862.

N. B. Dillard, Washington County, died in prison.

R. L. Dunman, Harris County, present.

S. M. Dennis, Harris County, died in prison.

S. Epperson, died in prison.

L. H. A. Epperson, killed at Chickamauga.

J. W. S. Emerson, prisoner of war.

F. M. Elam, thirteen horses killed or wounded under him.

W. H. Elkins, died in Bastrop County in 1878.

Sam Everett.

J. C. Fowler, killed in Tennessee.

John Farmer, wounded at Murfreesboro and discharged.

John Foster, Montgomery County, killed in Montgomery County in 1868.

J. W. Forsgard, promoted to Ordnance Department.

W. M. Grubb, Washington County, now minister of the Gospel.

T. A. Golder, prisoner of war.

J. A. Glover.

John Grisett, Washington County, discharged in 1862.

J. R. Grant, transferred to the 8th Infantry from Hood's Texas Brigade.

Thomas Haynes, Washington County, discharged and killed by accident on the way home.

Daniel Hoffman, Harris County, elected Lieutenant May, 1863, and killed at Farmerville.

Henry Hunter, elected Lieutenant, promoted to Captain, wounded at Farmington and died.

John W. Haskell, elected Lieutenant in 1863, killed November 28th, 1864.

A. L. Hammond, died March 23rd, 1871.

W. H. Harmon, County Judge of Brazoria County after the war.

H. Hemnoff, present.

Thomas Hoxey, promoted Major of battalion, discharged May, 1862, died in 1864.

C. Janks, Washington County, died in 1867.

A. Janks, wounded and discharged.

Ben Johnson, discharged in Kentucky in 1862.

J. A. P. Jackson, wounded at Woodsonville, Ky.

E. G. Jackson, present.

J. Cicero Jenkins.

J. A. Katchler, Germany.

Theo. C. Lubbock, Harris County, promoted to Captain Trans-Mississippi Department, discharged November, 1862.

M. A. Lee, killed in Tennessee.

William Moss, killed at Murfreesboro July 13, 1862.

—— McClennan, discharged.

P. Milton, wounded at Farmington, Tennessee.

D. C. Muckle, Montgomery County, killed November 28, 1864.

D. Mitchell, Montgomery County, died in prison.

J. Mitchell, Montgomery County, wounded September 17th.

J. F. Matthews ("Doc"), Washington County, elected Lieutenant July 25th, Captain October 7th, 1864, twice wounded, died December, 1881.

J. W. Matthews.

W. E. Moore, wounded at Murfreesboro.

J. W. Martin.

Ed. Malone, discharged at Corinth; died July 12, 1867, at Galveston.

Ed. McKnight, wounded and disabled for infantry, and transferred from Hood's Brigade.

J. McCormack, died in Kentucky in 1862.

A. McMurry, discharged in 1863.

—— McAvoy, transferred to White's Battery in 1863.

A. Neils.

A. W. Proctor, Washington County, wounded at Waynesboro.

T. J. Proctor.

Ira Proctor.

J. S. Paul, died at Chattanooga, Tenn.

J. B. Pinkston, Montgomery County, wounded.

J. H. Pinchback, died in 1887.

J. D. Parks, killed in Tennessee.

M. T. Parks.

R. A. Parks, discharged at Corinth in May, 1862.

Wm. M. Pitts, died in Nashville, 1862.

J. W. Rowt, Washington County, discharged.

S. R. Rowt.

G. R. Rowt.

J. N. Rogers, discharged.

H. G. Rice, discharged March, 1863.

W. Robinson.

M. A. Royston, promoted Adjutant to regiment and Lieutenant Colonel, and Assistant Adjutant General.

Tom Reverly, transferred from Hood's Brigade in East Tennessee.

S. P. Soser, died at Huntsville, Ala., in 1863.

W. Soser, discharged.

R. G. Simonton, wounded in Tennessee.

—— Thaxton, Washington County, wounded in Tennessee.

J. H. Thompson, wounded and discharged.

C. W. Voght, present.

P. M. West, died in prison.

J. H. West.

P. C. Walker, Harris County, died in Kentucky.

J. W. Woods, died in prison.

Tom Williams, wounded in Tennessee.

W. H. Warren.

T. T. Wayne, discharged.

Richard West, discharged in 1863, died in 1869.

Fred Weegan, died at Bowling Green, Ky.

Tom Walker, transferred to 4th Tennessee.

Hays T. Yarrington.

Two hundred and forty-eight men of this famous regiment answered for duty on the day preceding the surrender

at Jonesboro; only two men surrendered, the balance thinking the war would be continued in the Trans-Mississippi Department. Nearly all were paroled on reaching Generals Taylor and Forrest.

CHAPTER LVII.

JAYBIRD DEMOCRATIC ASSOCIATION.

To give a detailed history of the Jaybird and Woodpecker parties of Fort Bend County is not in the scope of this work, for it would require more space than is contained in the book. The reader is asked to be satisfied with a brief statement of the causes and results. The Jaybird party originated in the desire of the white people to have a government of the white people, by the white people, for all the people. Prior to 1888, the administration of the county affairs had largely been in the hands of negro officials, and those selected by this class, resulting in gross mismanagement in many departments of the county government at various times. The taxpayers had protested against the state of affairs without substantial results, and in the early part of 1888 the Rosebud Club was formed by a small number of white citizens. The membership was gradually increased, gathering members from all parts of the county, which finally resulted in the formation of the Young Men's Democratic Club. This association determined to attempt to correct the evils and establish a pure government by the white people, and several conferences were had with the opposing parties without results. In due time each side nominated a full county ticket, and after a heated canvas the candidates of the white people were defeated. During this canvas the term Jaybirds was applied to the defeated party and Woodpeckers to the others, and the name stuck to each. Many matters occurred that intensified the feeling, personal difficulties occurred, families were divided, and finally, on August 16th, 1889,

a deadly conflict resulted, and after the smoke of battle cleared away it was found that H. H. Frost, V. M. Gibson and W. M. Andrus, of the Jaybirds, J. W. Parker and H. S. Mason, of the Woodpeckers, and Frank Smith of the State Rangers, were wounded, and James Garvey and J. W. Blakely of the Woodpeckers were killed. Frost died a few days afterwards, but all the others recovered. Shortly after this occurrence the Woodpeckers resigned, the prominent members removed from the county, leaving the Jaybirds in control, and on October 3rd, 1889, the organization now in existence, and known as the Jaybird Democratic Association, was formed, after adopting the following Constitution and By-Laws, to-wit:

Constitution and By-Laws.

To the People of Fort Bend County, in Mass Meeting Assembled:

The undersigned committee, appointed by you on the 3d day of October, 1889, for the purpose of drafting a Constitution and By-Laws for an association of the people of this County, beg leave to submit for your consideration the subjoined Constitution and By-Laws for an organization by the people of the County.

Your committee has labored diligently to draft such an organic law and code of rules as will conduce to the formation of an organization that is of paramount importance, and that will prove a lasting blessing to the people of our County.

Respectfully submitted,

M. J. HICKEY,
SAMUEL A. STONE,
JOHN C. MITCHELL,
CLEM BASSETT,
YANDELL FERIS,
J. A. BALLOWE,
F. M. O. FENN,
H. R. FARMER.

PREAMBLE.

Whereas, For years past the laws of the State of Texas have been administered in Fort Bend County by corrupt and infamous officials in the manner that the lives, liberty and property of the white citizens have had no protection, and who have been taxed to the limits of the law, without representation, by a set of ignorant and

dishonest officials, for their own personal aggrandizement, retarding the development of our county's resources and its financial prosperity by squandering the public money for private uses; and,

Whereas, We the white citizens of said county, realize that there should be some concert of action among us for the protection of our lives, liberty and property, and that an honest and economical county government cannot be maintained and perpetuated without honest and capable officials, we have formed ourselves into an association, whose object shall be the mutual protection of the white race, and the maintenance of an honest and economical county administration. We, therefore, organize ourselves, to be known as the "Jaybird Democratic Organization of Fort Bend County, Texas."

CONSTITUTION.

ARTICLE 1. The object of this Association shall be to secure to the people of Fort Bend County economical and honest county government, and the election of honest and faithful county officials.

ART. 2. The officers of this Association shall be composed of a President, First and Second Vice Presidents, Secretary and Treasurer.

ART. 3. The officers of this Association shall be elected by ballot at the first annual meeting of each year, and shall serve for the period of one year; provided, the officers elected at the organization of this Association shall hold their offices until the third semi-annual meeting of this Association.

ART. 4. It shall be the duty of the President to preside over all meetings of the Association, and perform such other duties as may be required of him by the By-Laws of this Association.

ART. 5. It shall be the duty of the First Vice President to preside over the meetings of this Association and perform all duties devolving upon the President, in the absence of the President; and in the absence of the President and First Vice President, then the powers and duties of the President shall devolve upon the Second Vice President.

ART. 6. In the absence of all the officers named in Article 5, then the Association shall, by ballot, proceed to elect from the members of the Association a President *pro tem*.

ART. 7. It shall be the duty of the Secretary to keep a roll of the membership of the Association and correct minutes of the Association in a well bound book, and receive all moneys due the Association, and pay the same over to the Treasurer, and take his receipt therefor. He shall keep a correct account of all moneys received by him for the use of the Association, which said account shall be open to the inspection of the members at all times.

ART. 8. It shall be the duty of the Treasurer to receive and receipt for all moneys paid to him by the Secretary. He shall pay all war-

rants drawn by the Finance Committee and countersigned by the President. Said Finance Committee to be composed of five (5) members of the Association, who shall be appointed by the President.

ART. 9. All persons nominated for Court office or subject to the Commissioners' Court for appointment to office shall be voted for by ballot.

ART. 10. 'This Constitution shall be amended only by a two-third vote of the Association at a regular meeting.

ART. 11. There shall be held at the town of Richmond two (2) regular meetings of this Association each year, said meetings to be held on the first Monday of each term of the District Court of Fort Bend County; provided, there shall be held at such place such special meetings as shall be called by the President.

ART. 12. Every *bona fide* white citizen of Fort Bend County shall be eligible to membership in this Association.

ART. 13. The members of this Association shall support and use all legal and honorable means to secure the election of its candidates, and in the event of their election the members pledge themselves to make their official bonds and accord them their moral support so long as they merit the same by a faithful and conscientious discharge of official duty.

ART. 14. All *bona fide* white residents of Fort Bend County, who shall sign the Constitution within thirty (30) days after the date of organization, shall thereby become members; provided, that any person eligible to membership may, during thirty (30) days, become members by requesting the secretary to place their name on the roll of membership

ART. 15. The object of this Association is to combine and unite the white people for the advancement and prosperity of the county; for the purpose of *securing a faithful and honest discharge* of official duty by all public servants, and to prevent forever this county from relapsing into the disastrous and disgraceful administration of public affairs which has oppressed this county for a quarter of a century. We, therefore, declare that any white man, now residing in this county, or who shall hereafter acquire citizenship in this county, who shall undertake to lead against this Association any political faction or voting population opposed to the principles and objects of this Association, shall be considered and treated as a *social* and political *outcast*.

ART. 16. Upon the adoption of this Constitution the Association shall be deemed to be organized.

AMENDMENT TO THE CONSTITUTION.

That in mass meeting of the Association, the whole vote of each precinct shall be cast by the members present from that precinct,

the vote to be pro rated according to the whole number of votes such precinct is entitled to; if any member present so desires it.

That we are opposed to a second term in any office unless it is supported by three-fourths (3-4) of the members of the Jaybird Democratic Association.

This resolution is not to apply to present incumbents filling unexpired terms.

BY-LAWS.

No. 1. There shall be a standing Committee on By-Laws, to be appointed by the President, whose duty it shall be to propose such amendments to the By-Laws, and such new By-Laws, as may be necessary to govern this Association.

No. 2. The Committee on By-Laws shall consist of five (5) members of the Association, to be appointed by the President.

No. 3. No member of this Association shall become a candidate before the people for any county office without the indorsement of this Association, and no member of this Association shall accept an appointment to a county office except by request of this Association; said request and indorsement in either instance to be expressed by the Association at a regular or call meeting.

No. 4. No member of this Association shall become security upon the official bond of any officer who accepts office without the consent and indorsement of this Association, and no member shall aid or abet any officer in securing securities upon his official bond who shall accept office without the consent and indorsement of this Association.

No. 5. Any member of this Association who shall be guilty of gross violation of its Constitution or By-Laws, shall be suspended by the Executive Committee for such length of time as said committee may deem proper, and may be expelled by a two-third vote of the Association; provided, any member violating By-Law No. 4 shall be considered as having severed his connection with this Association, and his name be stricken from the roll of membership of this Association.

No. 6. There shall be an Executive Committee of fifteen (15) appointed by the President, who shall serve until the third semi-annual meeting of this Association, whose duty it shall be to receive applications for membership, to fill vacancies which may occur in the offices of the Association, to see that all county officers get good bonds, and generally to look out for the interests of the Association and welfare of the county.

No. 7. The Executive Committee shall be composed of the President of this Association, who shall be chairman of the committee, and three (3) members from each commissioners' precinct and two (2) from the county at large.

No. 8. The Executive Committee shall meet at the town of Richmond every three (3) months, on the first Monday in February, May, August and November of each year, for the transaction of such general business as may come before them, and to receive and act upon all applications for membership; said applications shall receive a two-third vote of the committee in order to entitle the applicant to membership.

No. 9. The Executive Committee may hold such special meetings as may be called by the President.

No. 10. If at any meeting of the Executive Committee, the President, First and Second Vice President should be absent, said committee shall select from its members a chairman, who shall, for the time being, exercise all the powers and duties of a regular chairman.

No. 11. There shall be a Finance Committee appointed by President, composed of five (5) members of the Association, whose duty it shall be to audit all accounts due by the Association, and to draw drafts upon the Treasurer for such amounts as they may find to be due by the Association, and said committee shall discharge such other duties as may be required of them by the President.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

Henry Farmer,	W. M. Darst,
N. D. Anderson,	J. H. P. Davis,
P. E. Peareson,	T. W. Jones,
Jack Adams,	D. J. DeWalt,
J. R. Fenn,	R. L. Harris,
J. A. Gibson (deceased),	R. P. Briscoe.

COUNTY-AT-LARGE.

Haywood Brahan,	R. J. Ransom.
-----------------	---------------

FINANCE COMMITTEE.

James Slyfield,	A. Kaulfers,
J. M. Moore,	R. T. Mulcahy.
J. L. Dillard.	

COMMITTEE ON BY-LAWS.

J. C. Mitchell,	P. E. Peareson,
M. J. Hickey,	O. D. Kirkland.
J. A. Ballowe.	

This organization included within its membership ninety per cent. of the white people of the county, regardless of

their political creed, and has continuously furnished an efficient and honest government by the white people; the bitter feeling engendered during these stormy times has subsided, and all is quiet along the "Potomac." A number of Woodpeckers are now enrolled with the Jaybirds, the darkies are fully satisfied, content to leave the county affairs in the hands of the white people. The movement started by the Fort Benders has spread to the adjoining counties, all of which now have associations of white men who direct the county business.

CHAPTER LVIII.

THE GREAT FLOOD OF 1899

Did untold damage to Fort Bend County; crops, stock, and agricultural implements were carried away in great profusion, and some lives lost. The town of Richmond, especially Railroad Street, was under water for several days from four to five feet, the water extending out into the prairie, and in places seven miles wide, completely surrounding the town. The higher parts of the town escaped overflow, but down Railroad Street towards the bridge the track was submerged. Many people were rescued from trees by boats, most of whom were of the colored population.

AN INCIDENT OF THE FLOOD.

Edmond Carter, a negro man who still lives in Richmond, had quite an interesting and exciting experience during the great overflow of the Brazos, as described above. He and others lived four miles from town, near the river, and the flood water surrounded them, cutting them off from all means of escape by flight. The water was from six to twenty feet deep. When it was no longer possible to remain in the cabins, Edmond placed eighteen women and children of his race in a large hackberry tree, and they remained there three days and nights until rescued by M. D. Fields and others with skiffs. During the time, one woman being overcome for sleep, persisted in doing so and falling out into the water, and Edmond had to rescue her again and again, until finally, he lashed her to a limb. When the people wanted

water Carter would let his shoe down, with small rope attached, and bring it up in that manner until all were served.

When Edmond was brought off in the last skiff load and landed on high ground opposite the town on the east side of the river, where a camp with provisions had been established for the unfortunates, he called for Mr. August Meyer, and, when asked what he wanted, said: "I want a half and half gin and whiskey, quick." Jesse H. Croom brought Edmond to this country from Alabama before the Civil War. He owns 214 acres of land worth \$20 per acre.

CHAPTER LIX.

GREAT STORM OF 1900.

This fearful storm, which swept over Fort Bend County, causing such destruction to life and property, struck the town of Richmond in the evening, on the 8th day of September, 1900. It first came from the north with great fury, the wind being accompanied by torrents of rain, which lasted until near midnight; then there was an interval, and it came again from the east, which lasted several hours. During this time great damage was done in the city. Many houses were unroofed, blown off of foundations, and some torn to pieces. Only three lives were lost in town—all negroes, a man, wife and child, who were killed by the colored Baptist Church falling in on them. They had quit their houses and ran to it for safety. Several lives were lost on the prairie by farm houses being blown away and torn to pieces. The great clock and bell on the court house were blown off with the dome, and the clock entirely demolished as it fell to the hard pavement in the court yard. The bell caught on the roof and hung there throughout the storm, and was afterwards lowered to the ground, where it still remains, not much damaged. The white Baptist Church was entirely destroyed and the Methodist Church badly damaged, while the Episcopal Church escaped injury entirely.

The shaft of the Jaybird monument in the court yard was blown off the pedestal and the representation of a jaybird perched on top of the shaft was broken off and has not since been replaced.

The shaft also of General Lamar's monument was blown

off with some others in the cemetery. The people were greatly distressed during the long continuation of the storm, and some of them walked the streets all night. In fact no one slept very much. At this time the city of Galveston was being destroyed, or nearly so. Carpenters had to be imported to help repair the damage, so great was the havoc made.

Eighty-four lives were lost in Fort Bend County, seventy-two of them dying from wounds after the storm was over.

SAD INCIDENT OF THE STORM.

The house in which Mr. Hubbard lived, on John R. Fenn's farm, in the lower part of Fort Bend County, was partly wrecked, and the family ran out and sought another place of refuge, Mrs. Hubbard with a two-months-old baby in her arms, and Mr. Hubbard taking care of the children who could walk. A tree blew down on the mother, breaking her back, but she clung to the child and had it in her arms when rescued. She was fatally hurt, however, and died in a month.

ESTIMATED LOSS OF PROPERTY IN FORT BEND COUNTY BY THE STORM OF 1900.

The following extract from the Galveston News was prepared at the time by W. L. Davidson, of Richmond:

"Our people sympathize with Galveston in her heavy calamity, and would like to have shown our sympathy in a more substantial manner, but unfortunately we, too, are in wreck and mourning, and have little else but sympathy to give. But the heavy calamity of Galveston was so appalling, so overshadowing everything else, that all eyes, all thoughts, were turned there.

"Our people were struggling manfully to recover from

the disastrous flood of 1899, when the storm of September the 8th came, sweeping away every vestige that the flood had left us, taking in its path many valuable lives.

"I give you the following estimate of our property loss in this county:

1330 residences, including outhouses, at \$500 per house	\$ 665,000
2850 tenant houses, including outhouses, stables and barns, \$50 per house	142,000
98 gin houses, \$800 per gin.....	78,400
238 stores, business houses of all sorts, at \$500 per house.....	115,500
Machinery and building at Sugarland.....	75,000
Machinery and building at Sartartia.....	40,000
Machinery and building at State farm.....	10,000
Other machinery and buildings.....	25,000
10,000 bales of cotton, at \$40 per bale.....	400,000
5000 tons cottonseed, at \$10 per ton.....	50,000
Pecans	50,000
Cattle, horses and mules killed.....	20,000
Cane crop	250,000
Corn crop.....	50,000
Loss on merchandise throughout the county....	52,000
Fencing	10,000
TOTAL.....	\$2,136,700

"Of course, this is but an estimate, but when the real loss is known, this estimate will prove very nearly correct, perhaps a little less than the loss really is. * * * *

"When counted in, the loss of timber in the bottoms will bring the loss to nearly \$3,000,000. From Wallis to 'Damon's Mound' on the west side of the river, and from the Waller County line to Juliff on the east side of the river, a large proportion of the people are homeless and destitute.

* * * * "

CHAPTER LX.

A FEW FACTS ABOUT FORT BEND COUNTY—EXTRACTS FROM THE TEXAS COASTER.

Fort Bend County is absolutely unsurpassed in America for fertility. It will not produce wheat, because it is not a wheat country. It has the finest rice lands in the world, which are being rapidly developed. Its prairie lands yield from one-half to one bale of cotton to the acre, from twenty to forty bushels of corn, and all kinds of fruits except apples and other fruit requiring a cold climate. Oats will yield from thirty to forty bushels. Water can be obtained at fifteen to forty feet, and it is good and clear. The bottom lands will produce from one to two bales of cotton, and from forty to eighty bushels of corn to the acre, and everything else that the prairie will yield.

As a fruit country, no place can surpass it, and truck gardening cannot be done more successfully anywhere.

It has fine cane lands, there being two large sugar mills in the county. There is also a paper mill.

Its market facilities are good. Two large cities, Houston and Galveston, are but an hour's ride by rail from the county, while two trunk lines traverse it at right angles, leading to the principal points east and north.

The school and church facilities of the county are good and constantly improving, and the society will compare favorably with the most enlightened and cultured of the older States. The laws are administered by the best set of officers in Texas, and the evil-doers have a "rocky road to travel."

Taxes are lighter than in most of the counties of the State. Land can be had at from \$5 to \$30 an acre, according to location, but is rising rapidly.

The climate is mild. In winter it rarely goes below thirty degrees, while the summers are tempered by the cooling breezes of the gulf.

Politics cut but little figure. The county government is by and for the people, and under its system corruption is impossible.

The soil throughout the county is from eight to twenty feet deep, and is inexhaustible. Fertilizing is never resorted to, and is never needed. The soil ranges from sandy loam to black waxy. There is no stone or rock in the county to retard farm work. It is all pure soil, deep and rich, and highly susceptible to the touch of man. A small farm properly worked will yield its owner more clear money and comfort in Fort Bend County than almost anywhere else.

In fact, to the prospective settler there is no more favored country on God's footstool than old Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER LXI.

SHORT SKETCHES OF OLD SETTLERS.

ROBERT HODGE.

Mr. Hodge is now a resident of Richmond, Fort Bend County, and has been for nearly sixty-six years; was born on Galveston Island on the 18th of May, 1836. His parents were colonists of Stephen F. Austin, and settled near Damon's Mound. When the Mexicans came in 1836 the people around the mound fled before them, and took refuge at Galveston, except those who went with Houston's army. This disagreeable flight caused the birthplace of Mr. Hodge to be on the famous island. After the battle of San Jacinto the family removed to Fort Bend County, and their descendants have made this their home since.

R. H. WORTHINGTON.

R. H. Worthington is an old Texan, and one of the good and worthy citizens of Fort Bend County. He was born in Pitt County, North Carolina, on June the 6th, 1826, but came from Alabama to Fort Bend County in 1849. During the great yellow fever epidemic of 1853 he nursed patients almost incessantly, being a member of the Howard Association, organized at that time for the purpose of taking care of the sick. He escaped all of the dangers to life and health while engaged in this laudable work, and still resides at Richmond. His wife, Mrs. Mary E. Worthington, was born in Washington County, Georgia, in 1820. Her maiden name was Rogers. In Georgia she married William McGee, and came from Alabama to Texas in 1850.

They started in 1849, but came by land, and had a long and tedious trip, crossing the line of Texas, however, in the last named year. They first settled in Washington County, but soon came on to Fort Bend. About one year after arriving here her husband accidentally killed himself with a gun. In November, 1853, she married Mr. Worthington.

ABRAHAM DARST

came to Texas in the early '20s from St. Charles County, Missouri, and settled at Damon's Mound. This famous mound is situated partly in Fort Bend County and partly in Brazoria, all of the league of Mr. Darst being in the latter county. He was married twice, the children of the first wife being Emery, John, Edmund and Patrick. By his last wife were Rosetta and Richard. Emery Darst married Miss Mary Ann Moore. She was born in St. Charles County, Mo., and died in 1902, in the eighty-third year of her age. Her people came to Texas in 1827, when she was about seven years of age. Her father was Elisha Moore, also a native of Missouri, and a relative of Daniel Boone. Benjamin Boone, a Mier prisoner who died in Blanco County a few years ago, was a cousin to Mary Ann Moore. Lon Moore, an old settler and Indian fighter of Medina County, also says that he is related to Daniel Boone, and must be a branch of the same family. Some of the Darsts moved further west, and a creek in Guadalupe County is named for them. Some settled at Gonzales, and one was killed in the Alamo. Dave Darst and his family were the last ones to leave Gonzales on the approach of the Mexicans, and before they had proceeded far the smoke from the burning town was seen.

The Darsts were brave, reliable citizens, as all the old settlers were, with few exceptions, who came as colonists under Stephen F. Austin. Two of the Darsts, Edward

and R. B., fought at the battle of San Jacinto in the company of Captain William H. Patton.

W. H. Darst ("Chuck"), one of the sons of Emery Darst, was a Terry Ranger, and at one time served as sheriff of Fort Bend County. He still resides in the county and is a prominent stock man.

Robert Darst, another son of Emery Darst, and also one of the staunch citizens of Fort Bend County, resides in Richmond.

Mrs. Hallie Hodge, a sister, keeps a boarding house in Richmond.

There are many old settlers of Fort Bend County whom the writer can only give a passing notice of, as their history could not be procured.

Levi P. Scott was one of Fannin's men.

Courtney Gibbs was an old settler of this county.

J. W. Eckman came to Fort Bend in 1857 from Maryland.

John H. Herndon, another old settler, and a member of the Somerville expedition.

Freeman Douglas was a Mier prisoner, and an uncle of Mrs. Mary W. Frost, Mrs. Phoebe D. Everett and Mrs. W. L. Davidson, of Richmond.

Mrs. Irene Hocker, born in Richmond.

Ingham S. Roberts, well posted on the Masonic history of Fort Bend.

Henrietta Lamar, wife of General Lamar, died October 8th, 1891, and is buried at Richmond.

M. M. Battle, an old settler of Fort Bend County, was born in New Orleans February 20th, 1800, and died at Richmond, Fort Bend County, January 15th, 1856. He at one time held the office of County Judge of Fort Bend.

Thompson's Ferry is noted in the history of Texas as the place in Fort Bend where the Mexican army made the passage of the Brazos. Thompson had a negro named Moses who was captured by Santa Anna at the ferry, and was sent with a message to General Houston while he was in camp in the bottom at "Groce's Retreat," telling him that he was coming up there soon and smoke him out.

When the Mexicans came to the ferry quite a number of the settlers who had congregated at Thompson's large house on the east side of the river were dancing, and although the Mexicans fired on the place and hit the house repeatedly, the dance went on. The river was very high, and the dancers said the Mexicans were poor shots, and they could not cross the river. When Almonte, however, effected a crossing lower down, they had to run.

CHAPTER LXII.

FALLING OF THE COUNTY BRIDGE AT RICHMOND.

On Sunday, about the 3rd day of August, 1893, the county bridge across the Brazos River at Richmond collapsed and went down, carrying with it several hundred head of cattle, about thirty horses, and two negro cow hands. The cattle belonged to William Nash, and he was driving them east to Cow Creek, near the line of Fort Bend and Brazoria Counties. R. H. Worthington, who lived on the west side of the river, above the bridge, was an eye witness to the catastrophe, having walked from his house down to the bluff to watch them cross. He says that when the cattle came to the bridge, the two negro hands, Charles Bailey and Sam Johnson, were in the lead, pointing the cattle. A sign was posted on the bridge warning people to go slow, and when a considerable number of cattle had passed onto it and the lead ones were nearly off the middle span they began to walk tolerably fast, and the two hands in front whipped them back with their quirts. This brought on the calamity that was trying to be avoided—by checking the gait of those in front. The middle and rear cattle crowded until a dense mass was on the middle span, filling the bridge full, and at this time the span broke and went down, carrying all of the horses, the two hands, and about two-thirds of the cattle, the herd numbering in all about four hundred head. The cattle which were left on the west span, quite a number of them, were either pushed off by those in the rear, or voluntarily leaped into the river to join the struggling mass which filled the channel of the stream. As soon as possible other hands in the

rear made their way to these frantic cattle and turned them back. Many of the cattle swam out, but most of them died afterwards from injuries received, or were rendered worthless. The cattle were strung out nicely when they reached the bridge, and would have crossed safely if allowed to have had their own way in doing so. The bridge evidently was looked upon as unsafe, and that fact should have caused the cow men to string them out, instead of letting them mass. The two hands that lost their lives went backwards, and struck the water beneath their horses, being still in the saddles, and one or both were still in this position when recovered, astride of their dead horses. The inquest on the bodies of Bailey and Johnson was held by Wiley P. Jones, Justice of the Peace, on the 6th day of August, 1893. The bridge in question was a second-hand one, having been purchased from a company who placed it across the Brazos River near Hempstead for Waller County, but was condemned, and never received by that county. It was used awhile, however, by the traveling public, but finally fell into the river and was purchased by the Fort Bend County authorities and hauled to Richmond on wagons.

CHAPTER LXIII.

FOSSIL REMAINS OF A GREAT ANIMAL FOUND IN FORT BEND COUNTY.

One of the largest specimens of great animals now extinct was found some years ago by a Mr. Hubbard, in the bank of the Brazos River, while fishing about sixteen miles below the town of Richmond. On this occasion Hubbard had landed in a skiff and instructed his son to tie up the boat and then come on up the river to a certain place not far away, where he intended to sit upon the bank and fish. The boy obeyed the injunction, and tied the boat to what he supposed to be an old dead cottonwood snag protruding from the water near the bank. When Mr. Hubbard returned to get in the boat again, and while untying it, he discovered that it was not a common snag, but, as he supposed, was a petrified piece of timber. After further investigation, however, it proved to not have been wood at all, but was the tusk of a great animal. An excavation was now made to secure the remains of the animal, and after digging and tunnelling about twenty-two feet, he succeeded in getting out one of the tusks, which was eighteen feet and two and one-fourth inches in length, and sixteen feet from the head measured eight inches in diameter. The tusks of this animal did not curve like those of an elephant, but ran straight out from the head. Hubbard succeeded in getting out this tusk and part of the head, when a great rise came in the Brazos, and completely filled up the excavation, and no further attempt has been made to secure the balance of this immense animal. Not

enough of importance was placed upon the find by Mr. Hubbard. He sent a negro with a wagon to haul the tusk home, but he was unable to load it alone, and proceeded to chop it up in sections so that he could do so. One of these parts is now on exhibition in the saloon of C. A. Austin in Richmond. It is hard to realize or get a right conception of the great size of this animal. One capable of carrying a pair of tusks with ease more than eighteen feet in length, which at the head was as large around as an ordinary man's body, required a monster in size indeed. These tusks did not taper much, and were large and stubby at the extreme points. When the find was made the Brazos River was at a very low ebb, and had been for some time, and ordinarily this tusk which Hubbard recovered was under water. The body of the animal, however, was under the bank. The bones of large animals have been found above Richmond, in the Brazos, and are now on exhibition in Rosenberg. These animals might have met their death by miring in an attempt to get water. It would take solid soil to stand their weight.

CHAPTER LXIV.

SUGARLAND—COLONEL CUNNINGHAM'S PLANTATION.

This fine plantation and sugar refinery, now owned by Colonel E. H. Cunningham, is a combination of five plantations, namely: Kyle and Terry, Thatcher, Brebard and Borden—twelve thousand five hundred acres, six thousand five hundred of which are in cultivation, cane and corn principally, but also sorghum, alfalfa, and truck gardens. Williams, Brown and Belknap, part of the Allcorn and part of the William Stafford, are the original grants on which this plantation is located. John M. Williams owned the place in 1828, having the league located then. In 1840 S. M. Swinson brought several schooner loads of cane up the Brazos River to plant on his farm, but concluding not to do so, sold the cane to Williams, which he planted on this place, and made sugar with a horse mill, shipping it down the Brazos and finding a market for it at Galveston. Kyle and Terry bought the property in 1853, and put up a sugar house. Kyle died in 1862, and Colonel Frank Terry was killed in the civil war in 1861. The property was then divided between the Kyle and Terry heirs, and soon after James Freeman bought 1,600 acres from the heirs of Colonel Terry. The entire property then remaining was purchased from the heirs by Colonel Cunningham, who had everything remodeled and added a great amount of machinery, the expenses altogether amounting to about one million and a half dollars. Included in this was a sugar refinery and paper mill, the former being the finest in the South.

Colonel Cunningham is a native of Arkansas, and came to Bexar County, Texas, in 1856, and went into the stock business on Martinas Creek, and was very successful, but the civil war nearly broke him up. When the clash came between the North and South in 1861, Colonel Cunningham organized and commanded a famous company of western men called "Mustang Greys," who were incorporated with Hood's 4th Texas Brigade. The Colonel passed through all of General Hood's big battles and was wounded fourteen times, slightly, the most severe one being in the foot, which put him off duty nearly a month. When Hood was made a Major General, Captain Cunningham was appointed Chief of Staff and Inspector General, and commanded the regiment during the campaign of 1862. At the great battle of Gaines' Mill 400 of the regiment were engaged, and out of this number 252 were killed and wounded. The regiment penetrated the Federal lines and General Lee said that it was one of the most brilliant charges of the war, and the most important—turned McClellan's right flank and saved Richmond. While the men were advancing, and within fifty yards of the enemy, Hood said, "Fix bayonets;" that was the word that saved the day; bayonets were fixed and the line penetrated. Here Thomas, the only brother of Colonel Cunningham, was killed, just before they got to the works. The regiment pushed half a mile inside the Federal lines, and here the Colonel rallied eighty-two men, and they were charged by cavalry with the intention of crushing the remnant of the regiment. The 11th Mississippi and 18th Georgia came to their assistance, and the Federal cavalry was nearly annihilated, no horse passing through a lane there with a rider. The men had bayonets fixed, and as the cavalry passed Pat Penn fired and emptied one saddle, and then lifted another man out of his saddle with his bayonet. Haywood Brahan also fired and got his man, but being of lighter build than Penn, when

he transfixed another trooper with his bayonet was unable to withdraw it, and had to let go his gun, and it went with the man until he fell to the ground.

Besides his plantation of "Sugarland," Colonel Cunningham has 700 acres leased of the Cartwright place, seven miles below. The Colonel also built a little over fourteen miles of railroad, called the "Sugarland Road," connecting with the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe at Duke, and the International at Arcola, running down Oyster Creek through all the main sugar lands. At his plantation the Colonel has a store, postoffice, etc. It is situated in Fort Bend County on the Southern Pacific Railroad, eight miles east of Richmond, and "Sugarland" is one of the stations.

Colonel Cunningham married Miss Narcissa Brahan, daughter of R. W. Brahan of Mississippi. Their children are Edward Brahan, Eva Lock, Susie Dismukes, Thomas Brahan, and Narcissa Haywood, all living, two married. Thomas married in San Antonio, Miss Maxwell, now dead. Edward Brahan married Miss McEachin of Richmond, Texas.

"Aunt Sarah Chase," an old negro woman who belonged to Colonel Terry, still lives on the plantation, and has many interesting things to tell about the old times before and during the war. She was brought from Virginia to Galveston when a child, with her mother and other children, by her master, Colonel Martin, who then came in a boat up to Harrisburg in the year about 1847. Colonel Frank Terry had bought the plantation now known as Sugarland from John M. Williams, and was at Harrisburg when Colonel Martin arrived there, and bought this family of negroes from him, and conveyed them to his farm in an ox wagon. On the way they met Williams and his family moving down towards Houston.

Just before Colonel Terry started to the war he had all

of the negroes marched out of the field singing the old cornfield songs. He then had them formed in line and gave them a talk, telling them he was going away, and that they must be good and obey the overseer and driver. Not long after he went to the war he was killed in battle and his body sent back home. Before the train arrived which conveyed the body the negroes were all brought from the field and lined up at the depot, and then informed that Colonel Terry had been killed, and that they were brought there to see the remains come in and attend the funeral. When the train came Aunt Sarah says that men wearing white gloves took the coffin out and they and all the negroes went out to where a vault had been prepared for the reception of the body, and it was deposited there with ceremonies. I suppose these men with white gloves were Masons. Mrs. Terry was afterwards buried in the same vault. There was great lamenting in the Terry family and among the negroes also when the body of the famous ranger arrived. The slaves all liked their master; he treated them well and gave them plenty to eat. The Terry home was out in the prairie, where the body was carried from the train. The old woman told the writer that she and her family were freed in the back yard behind their cabin; when asked how that was, she said that Judge Buckner came there where a lot of them were and told them that they were free.

CHAPTER LXV.

THE WATERS' PLANTATION.

This extensive farm and sugar plantation, now owned by T. W. House, of Houston, was first settled by Jonathan D. Waters, and is situated on the Brazos River and Oyster Creek, in the southeastern portion of Fort Bend County. Mr. Waters came here on the first day of March, 1840, and planted a crop of corn on the east bank of the Brazos, and raised it to maturity without a fence, at that time there being no stock in the Brazos bottom.

Mr. Waters came too late to receive a grant of land as an immigrant, and therefore had to purchase land, first buying one thousand acres from Francis Bingham and later two thousand acres from a Mr. Caples. He then opened an extensive farm and added to his former purchases of land two hundred acres bought from John Shipman.

The second crop of Mr. Waters was cotton, and that year he made one hundred and eighty bales. The third crop was a failure, the caterpillars almost destroying the plant, and only forty bales were gathered. He now purchased a portion of the Fitzgerald league, and increased the acreage in cotton until finally 500 bales were obtained at a single crop. After this Mr. Waters commenced raising cane, put up a sugar mill, and also established a brick yard, in 1849.

Allen Vince also had a farm near here on which he raised corn principally, but owned a stock ranch on Vince's Bayou. He built the famous bridge which was destroyed by Deaf Smith and a companion the morning of the day

on which the battle of San Jacinto was fought. Vince's place on Oyster Creek was near that of John R. Fenn, and at that time many runaway negroes were in hiding in the canebrakes and timbered bottoms of the Brazos, and the settlers had but little scruples about killing them, looking upon them as a menace to their families at times in the absence from home of the men, which was frequent, hunting cattle or going after supplies.

One morning Vince came to the house of Mr. Fenn and said:

"John, I snapped my gun at a negro this morning."

"Why did you not kill him?" was the answer. "That is what I would have done."

"Oh, I did as well as you would have done," said Vince. "I snapped again and killed him." This was a runaway negro and Vince had come upon him asleep in the bottom, lying at the base of a large tree, and a gun leaning against it. He was awakened, but instead of surrendering sprang to his feet and ran away, carrying his gun with him. Vince attempted to fire, but his gun snapped. The negro made no attempt to shoot, but kept on running, and Vince aimed and tried his rifle again, and this time successfully, the negro falling dead in his tracks at the fire. Now this runaway belonged to Caples, and he brought suit against Vince for damages to the amount of \$800, and gained it.

When Jonathan Waters died he willed his property to his wife, and she sold it to Thômas Pierce, and in 1872 T. W. House bought the property from Pierce. Mr. House expected at the time that John R. Fenn would own an interest with him, but as this partnership was not consummated, the friends of Mr. House informed him that he had an elephant on his hands, and would lose money on the purchase, and that the best thing he could do would

be to sell out at once. He, however, held the property, and spent more money on it, and employed Mr. Fenn to run it for him, which he successfully did for five years, proving to Mr. House and others that he had no elephant on his hands, or at least one that would not pay, for under the careful and judicious management of Mr. Fenn the plantation gradually increased, and now reaches from the Brazos River to Oyster Creek, embracing many hundreds or thousands of acres, for that matter, of the finest Brazos bottom land.

CHAPTER LXVI.

FIRST COURT HELD IN FORT BEND COUNTY.

In book A of the records of Fort Bend County the following is the first entry made:

FEBRUARY TERM, 1838.

Be it remembered that on the 27th day of February, 1838, the Honorable the District Court for the County of Fort Bend was opened agreeable to law; present, the Honorable Benjamin C. Franklin, Judge of the Second Judicial Circuit.

At which time John V. Morton, Sheriff of this county, returned the venire (heretofore issued), executed on the following persons, to-wit:

Samuel Jones,
H. M. Thompson,
Eli Fenn,
James W. Jones,
J. Coble,
John Goodman,
A. J. Bonds,
Coleman Reynolds,
Barney Wickson,
William Beard,
Thomas Hancock,
James B. Miller,
William Lindsey,
G. W. Pentecost,
G. B. Tankersly,
S. Phillips,
David Austin,
William Walker,

Elliott Hodge,
Moses Lapham,
Randolph Foster,
E. G. Rector,
Abner Echols.
Thomas J. Smith.
Ignatius Johnson,
G. W. Long,
L. M. Armstrong,
James Francis,
William L. Little,
Henry Jones,
John L. Bryan,
Joseph T. Bell,
Patrick Darst,
James Pevyhouse,
William Little.

From this list of thirty-five men were drawn the first grand jury:

William Walker, foreman,	J. Coble,
John Goodman,	William Beard,
Ignatius Johnson,	Barney Wickson,
William L. Little,	William Little,
Eli Fenn,	David Austin,
Henry Jones,	A. J. Bonds.
G. B. Tankersly,	

FIRST CASE.

John Colvin,	}
vs.	
James Wilson.	

"The defendant not appearing when called, it is ordered by the Court that James W. Smith, Esq., be appointed *curator ad hoc letum*, and that the case proceed as though the defendant had appeared."

Further on is this entry.

"It is ordered by the Court that H. E. Hudson and James W. Smith, Esq., be appointed a committee of examination during the present term to examine the claims of all applicants to plead and practice law in the several courts of this Republic." * * * "We have examined the claims of Wiley Martin to plead and practice law in the several courts of this Republic, and find that he is entitled to all the privileges of a member of the bar, and recommend his admission."

"The foregoing report appearing, it is ordered by the court that the clerk of this court issue such a license to the said Wiley Martin as is usual, and the court adjourn until tomorrow, 9 o'clock."

"FEBRUARY 28th, 1838.

"Wednesday morning, 9 o'clock, court met pursuant to adjournment, when the following jurors were drawn to serve at the next regular term of court:

L. Bradley,	Richard Vince,
J. Croft,	Abner Harris,
John Little,	Joseph Thompson,
P. Fairchild,	James W. Luth,
Hiram Goodman,	James Goodman,
A. Sigman,	John Levering,
John Fitzgerald,	Wm. Andrews,
Francis Mudd,	John Cunningham,
P. M. Hughes,	Robert Hunter,
F. Paschal,	A. F. Johnson,
John Hodge,	Francis Quioto,
William Lusk,	James Crank,
Johnson Hunter,	John H. Pickens,
Jesse H. Cartwright,	James Roden,
Moses Shipman,	C. C. Dyer,
John D. Thompson,	D. Wickson,
Allen Vince,	David Randon,
John Turner,	N. Mudd.

THE FIRST BILL FOUND

commences this way:

"The grand jurors came into court, their names being called, all answering to their names; they made the following presentment, to-wit:

"REPUBLIC OF TEXAS,

"County of Fort Bend.

"We, the grand jury in and for said county, on our oaths do present V. Banks and John Moore for a violation of the laws of the Republic in a case of assault and battery committed in said county against the peace and dignity of this Republic February 28th, 1838.

"WILLIAM WALKER, *Chairman.*"

FIRST PETIT JURY.

R. Jones,
William Goodman,
Joseph Kuykendall,
Hamilton Kiggins,
John Goodman,
Abner Echols,

David Austin,
Geo. W. Pleasants,
Sam Jean,
J. Hargraves,
J. W. Jones,
James Croft.

FIRST COUNTY OFFICERS.

John V. Morton, Sheriff; Wiley Martin, County Judge;
Thompson McMahan, District Clerk, M. M. Battle, County Clerk; Hiram Thompson, Assessor.

CHAPTER LXVII.

BUSINESS MEN OF RICHMOND TODAY.

T. B. Wessendorff.....	Undertaker and Lumber Yard.
J. C. Williams.....	R. R. Agent, Southern Pacific.
Joseph Rheadager.....	Groceries.
Thomas McGee.....	Saloon.
A. Cohorn.....	Blacksmith and Wheelwright.
Charley A. Austin.....	Saloon.
Adams Brothers.....	Saloon and Restaurant.
August Meyers.....	Dry Goods and Groceries.
J. T. Dyer.....	General Merchandise.
Dyer & Holmes.....	Groceries.
Gearge Reading.....	Saloon.
Farmer & Winston	Drug Store.
Stuart & Spencer.....	Drug Store.
J. H. P. Davis & Co.....	Bankers.
J. C. Florea	Editor Texas Coaster.
H. L. Somerville	Postmaster.
John M. Moore	Real Estate and Stock.
Homer Darst.....	Operator and Passenger Agent.
H. E. Mitchell	Hotel.
Mrs. Hallie Hodge	Boarding House.
William Rose.....	Shoemaker.
A. D. McNabb	Saddler.
C. O. Nash	Butcher.
— Smith	Butcher.
J. C. Spraul.....	Groceries.
R. G. Pleasants	Livery Stable.

Peter RosenMerchandise.
A. BravoMerchant Tailor.
H. L. DyerHardware.

RICHMOND BAR.

J. C. Mitchell,	Tom Peareson,
W. L. Davidson,	Everett Reading,
M. J. Hickey,	William Boyd,
F. M. O. Fenn,	H. T. McCabe,
D. R. Peareson,	C. L. Michael,
James Slyfield,	W. T. McFarland,
S. C. Russell,	J. C. Florea,
L. M. Williamson,	Geo. Baker,
Will Mitchell,	Geo. B. Lang.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

COUNTY OFFICERS OF FORT BEND COUNTY AT THE CLOSE OF THE CIVIL WAR.

R. J. Calder, County Judge.

Robert Hodges, County Clerk.

W. P. Duff, District Clerk.

J. W. Miles, Sheriff and Tax Collector.

W. L. Davidson, County Attorney.

C. C. Bass, Assessor.

David Ferguson, Justice of the Peace, Precinct No. 1.

J. H. Bailey, Constable.

These were elected in August, 1865. All were removed by military authority except W. P. Duff, who took the amnesty oath, the others refusing to do so.

CHAPTER LXIX.

PRESENT OFFICERS OF FORT BEND COUNTY.

MAJOR E. A. PEARESON, SHERIFF.

Edward Adolphus Peareson, present Sheriff of Fort Bend County, was born in Matagorda County, Texas, on the 2nd day of September, 1867. His father, P. E. Peareson, was a native of Alabama, but came to Texas when a child at a very early day and first settled with his parents in Victoria County; married Miss Minnie Rugely in Matagorda County, and came to Fort Bend County in 1867. The Peareson family have had representatives in every war in which the United States has been engaged—from the Revolution of 1776 to that with Spain in 1898. In the civil war P. E. Peareson was a lieutenant in Company D, 6th Texas, the company being commanded by his father, Captain E. A. Peareson, of Grandbury's Brigade.

The grandfather died in Matagorda County in the fall of 1865, and the father of Major Peareson died in Fort Bend County in July, 1895. Major Peareson spent the whole of his life in Fort Bend County, except when away at college. Before the war broke out with Spain he was captain of a company of State troops which was disbanded before hostilities commenced, but at the opening of the war received an unsolicited commission as Major from Governor Culberson, and assigned to duty under Colonel Luther Hare, 1st Texas Cavalry, serving in that capacity until the close of the war. Was elected Sheriff of Fort Bend County in the fall of 1902, and now serving his first

term. Married Miss Josie Stansbury of Fort Bend County April, 1889. They had two children, D. Rugely and Helen Hare Peareson. The first named is the only one now living.

WILLIAM MASTERSON, COUNTY JUDGE.

Judge Masterson is a native Texan, born in Brazoria, Brazoria County, on the 13th of August, 1871. His father, Thomas Washington Masterson, was named for a distant relative of General George Washington, Thomas Washington being the great-uncle of Thomas W. Masterson, who was also born in Texas. The grandfather of Judge Masterson on his mother's side was Dr. John G. Chalmers (an historic name), who was secretary of the Texas navy during the days of the Republic. The mother of Judge Masterson was Annie T. Chalmers. She was raised by General Thomas Green, being very young when her father, Dr. Chalmers, died. General Green was her brother-in-law, having married her sister Eliza. Another sister married Colonel Majors, who served in the Confederate army; prior to the breaking out of the civil war he was in the United States army, doing service on the Texas frontier, but went with the State when it seceded. One uncle of Judge Masterson, William Lee Chalmers, died last year (1903) in Washington, D. C. Senator John T. Morgan of Alabama was first cousin of the Judge's grandmother. The grandfather Masterson came from Tennessee to Texas, and settled at Velasco at an early day. The great-grandfather, Dr. Archibald Roane, was Governor of Tennessee in the early days of the independence of the United States.

Judge Masterson's father died in 1877 and he was left when very young on his own resources, worked hard, and took a course of studies in the University of Texas, and law department lectures. Received license to practice

law before he was of age, but his disabilities were removed according to the usages of law practice. Of the six brothers of his father's family, five of them were lawyers and three were judges, as was also his grandfather, Judge Thomas G. Masterson. Five are now living and in the active practice of law.

Judge Masterson married Miss Fannie Pierce Harris of Brazoria County in October, 1894. Her father was R. B. Harris. They came to Fort Bend County and to Richmond in 1897. Judge Masterson's first inductment into office was to fill an unexpired term of two months in the County Judge's office, made vacant by the resignation of Judge J. S. McEachin.

Judge Masterson is now serving his second term.

E. P. ANDRUS, DISTRICT CLERK.

Edgar P. Andrus was born in Richmond, Fort Bend County, October the 30th, 1858. His father, Walter Andrus, was also born in Fort Bend County in 1830, on the east side of the Brazos River, about four miles from Richmond. The grandfather, William Andrus, came with the first installment of Austin's colonists, and his league and labor of land was located on both sides of the Brazos, the league on the east and the labor on the west, in the bend.

When the Mexican army came in 1836, the Andrus family were living on the Benard, eighteen miles from the Brazos, and in their flight went to San Felipe, where Captain Mosly Baker and his men were guarding the river, and crossing there, went on with the fleeing families, and came back, with others of the colonists, to their homes, after the battle of San Jacinto.

William Andrus died in 1842, and Walter Andrus in 1897. They were farmers and stock raisers, except the father of E. P., who was a lawyer, abstractor and real

estate agent. The mother of District Clerk Andrus was the eldest daughter of Martin McMahan, and the grandmother was Lucinda Travers, on the mother's side. She was born in Florida, but came to Texas from Georgia at a very early day. The mother of Mr. Andrus was also born in Fort Bend County, in the town of Richmond. Her father died on "Big Creek," eight miles from Richmond, southwest course.

E. P. Andrus married Mary V. Sweeny, daughter of Jordon Sweeney, of Brazoria, an old colonist settler, Mr. Sweeny being a veteran of San Jacinto. The family of Mr. Andrus consists of wife and one child, Beulah Mary. Is now in the second year of his first term of office.

HENRY L. RANSOM, DEPUTY SHERIFF.

Henry Lee Ransom, the present efficient deputy under Sheriff Peareson, was born in Brenham, Texas, on the 29th of December, 1870. His father was a soldier under General Lee, his grandfather having ten sons in the Confederate army. Henry came to Fort Bend County in October, 1889, and was living in the county when the war broke out with Spain, and has the distinction of being the only Fort Bend County boy who served in the Philippines. He enlisted August 15th, 1899, in the company of Captain John A. Hulen, Company D, 33rd Infantry Regiment, U. S. Volunteers, commanded by Colonel Luther R. Hare. He saw much active service in the Philippines, and was one of the famous band under Colonel Hare that rescued Gilmore's men. On June the 30th, 1901, when his term of enlistment had expired, he received an honorable discharge, with the following military record from his Captain:

"Noncommissioned officer, Corporal. Battles, engagements, skirmishes and expeditions, San Jacinto, November 11, 1899. Taynadin Pass, December 4, 1899. San

Fabian, November 7, 1899; Augo, November 16, 1899; Bantayon, November 8, 1899; San Jose, December 7, 1899; Bandi, January 13, 1899; Licuan, January 25, 1900; Cagituman, April 19, 1900; Dalawog, April 20, 1900; Malibcong, May 19, 1900; Dinguan Mountain, September 16, 1900; insurgent attack on Bangua, September 20, 23 and 28, October 6, 13, 20 and 22, 1900. General Wheaton's expedition to Tinganyon Gulf November 5 to 26, 1899; expedition to Alson and San Jacinto, November 16 and 17, 1899; Cabaroan, November 23 to 25, 1899; operations, Young's Brigade, Northwest Luzon, November 27, 1899, to January 9, 1900; Brelbalason, May 22 to 23, 1900.

"Wounds received in service—None.

"Remarks—Character, excellent.

"Service—Honest and faithful."

Mr. Ransom has no family.

CLEM N. BASSETT, TAX COLLECTOR.

Clement Newton Bassett, the present Tax Collector of Fort Bend County, was born in Richmond, Texas, on the 7th of January, 1842. His father, Clem N. Bassett, Sr., was a native of Virginia and came to Texas in 1836, first stopping on the San Jacinto River at Lynchburg, where he married Miss Julia Lee Beale, also a native of Virginia. This was soon after the battle of San Jacinto, and the young people at once came to Richmond, Fort Bend County, and made that place their permanent home. Mr. Bassett was in the legal profession, and entered into the practice of law at Richmond successfully, and at one time represented his district in the State Legislature. He died in Houston of cholera in 1848. His wife survived him until 1888, and died at Richmond.

The grandmother of the subject of this sketch on his father's side was Miss Bacon, a relative of Nathaniel Ba-

con, the instigator and leader of the famous "Bacon's Rebellion," the first decided stand against British authority in the American Colonies. The grandmother on the mother's side was a Miss Lee, about first or second cousin to General Robert E. Lee.

At the commencement of the great civil war, in 1861, Mr. Bassett joined the "Terry Rangers" and was sworn into the Confederate States service at Houston, September the 7th, and at once went to the front. At the time he was but nineteen years of age, but participated in every battle in which his command was engaged, and was twice wounded. After the war he returned to Richmond, and in 1869 married Miss Lida Moore. She survived only about one year, and in 1885 Mr. Bassett married Miss Libbie Mitchell, daughter of Captain John C. Mitchell. of Richmond. He was the first sheriff elected after the close of the "Jaybird and Woodpecker" feud. They have five children living. He is now in his first term of office, and was elected without opposition.

J. T. GIBSON, TAX ASSESSOR.

John T. Gibson, the present Tax Assessor of Fort Bend County, was born in the county December 16, 1878. His father, J. A. Gibson, was a native of Mississippi, and came to Texas when a boy, but returned home and came again, at an early day, and settled in Fort Bend County. He married Miss Caroline Foster of Fort Bend, daughter of the old pioneer, Randolph Foster. She died and Mr. Gibson married his second wife, Miss Tennie Anderson, still living, and who is the mother of the subject of our sketch. J. A. Gibson, the father, died in 1892.

J. T. Gibson was appointed Tax Assessor to fill an unexpired term made vacant by the death of his brother, J. S.

Gibson, who held the office of assessor at the time of his death. When this term expired J. T. became a candidate for the office, and was elected in 1902, and is now filling his first elected term. He is a young man, unmarried, makes a good officer, and gives satisfaction generally.

WILEY P. JONES, JUSTICE OF THE PEACE,
PRECINCT No. 1.

Judge Wiley Powell Jones was born in Fort Bend County, eight miles below Richmond, on October 17, 1843. His father, Henry Jones, came to Texas in 1822 among the first installment of Austin's colonists, and first settled on New Year's Creek in what is now Washington County, near Independence. There a brother, William Jones, was born, the first child born in the colony.

They lived one year on New Year's Creek, and then came on down the Brazos River and settled below the present town of Richmond, where the Henry Jones league was located, the town of Booth now being situated on the upper league line. Here Wiley P. Jones was born at what was called by the family "The Old Prairie" home. His occupation as he grew up was farming and stock raising, until the breaking out of the civil war, when he joined the Confederate army, enlisting in Captain Sullivan's company, "Waul's Legion." While the command was encamped near Independence, Judge Jones contracted a severe case of measles, and came near dying, being two months in bed with his sister's family at the old home, whither he was conveyed from camp. When he finally recovered the legion had gone to Virginia, and he enlisted in another command, and after it disbanded was not attached to any other command during the balance of the war.

In 1887 he moved to Richmond, and has continued to reside here since, serving during that time nearly eight years as Justice of the Peace, and up to the present time has held sixty inquests on people who lost their lives in various manners—killed by trains, gunshot wounds, drowning, etc.

Judge Jones has been twice married, his first wife being Miss Sallie Bailey. She died in 1869, and his second wife was Mattie Bailey, sister of the first, and she died in 1880. Three children, all boys, living, none married. Of the two marriages eleven children were born, eight of whom are now dead.

F. M. O. FENN, COUNTY ATTORNEY.

Francis Marion Oatis Fenn was born and raised in Fort Bend County, nineteen miles below Richmond. His father was John Rutherford Fenn, who came to Texas in 1833 and located on the Brazos River. His mother, Rebecca Williams, came to Texas in 1846, and her parents also settled on the Brazos, in Fort Bend County. F. M. O. Fenn was educated at Roanoke College, Virginia, and the holder of the orator's medal from that institution against nine competitors on the 9th of June, 1879. He then took two years' course of law at the University of Virginia, graduating in law at that university and taking orator's medal from that institution also, on the 16th of May, 1881. In 1886 stumped Harris County for Alexander McGowen for County Treasurer, who was elected by a large majority and held the office as long as he lived. In the same year Judge Fenn stumped the City of Houston for the Hon. D. C. Smith for Mayor against the Hon. William R. Baker. Smith was elected by one vote. The subject of our sketch was one of the writers of the "Jaybird Democratic Consti-

tution" in 1889, and was secretary of the organization for five years. At the general election held in Fort Bend County in 1900 was elected County Attorney, and re-elected in 1902. His wife was Miss Lottie Benson of Charlotte, Virginia, and they have one son, Rutherford.

T. B. WESSENDORFF, TREASURER.

Tony B. Wessendorff, present County Treasurer, was born in Richmond, Fort Bend County, on the 19th day of November, 1872. His father, Anton Wessendorff, came to this County from Hamburg, Germany, when but eighteen years of age and made Fort Bend his permanent home. Here, in the course of time, he married Miss Johanna Janske; was industrious in his habits and made a worthy citizen. When the great civil war broke out between the North and South, he served the Confederacy under Gen. John B. Hood in the famous Fourth Texas Regiment, his captain being Thomas Mitchell, commanding Company F. On the bloody field of Chickamauga—where so many of the gallant Fourth went down to rise no more—Mr. Wessendorff was severely wounded and sent back home, and saw no more service. He raised a family of thirteen children—Tony Wessendorff being eighth in the list.

The mother died July 10th, 1888, and the father March 26th, 1891.

T. B. Wessendorff, the present incumbent, was elected to the office of County Treasurer in November, 1902, and is now serving his first term.

He married Miss Jennie Jones, and they have four children, all girls—Lizzie Davis, Jennetta, Bernadine and Margarette.

Mr. Wessendorff, in connection with his office, carries on a lumber and undertaking business, assisted by his brother, E. G. Wessendorff.

J. C. FLOREA,
SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION.

Mr. Florea is a young man of sterling qualities, affable, pleasant manners and has faithfully performed the duties of his office in looking after the schools of Fort Bend County. Recently he became the owner and publisher of the *Texas* [Richmond] *Coaster*, and is fully alive to the best interests of his patrons, and to that of Fort Bend County. No doubt under his management the *Coaster* will be up-to-date in all of the leading topics of the day, and be a credit to Fort Bend County as well as to himself.

M. M. NEWELL, COUNTY CLERK.

Mr. Newell is a young man and is now serving his first term of office. He has proved himself to be very efficient in the management of his work. His is one of the historic names of Fort Bend County, his people coming here in 1830, performed their part during the trying times of frontier days and Mexican invasion, held offices of trust and were classed among the staunch, upright citizens of Fort Bend County.

CHAPTER LXX.

"BILLY BOWLEGS."

"Billy Bowlegs" was a Seminole chief, and lived in the swamps and Everglades of Florida, and some might ask, what had he to do with the history of Fort Bend County. Personally, nothing, but Fort Bend has an old negro woman living at Old Arcola (Lucinda Lawson), who has some interesting reminiscences connected with the exploits of this famous chief. She belonged to Dr. Braden in Florida, who had a fine plantation not a great distance from the stronghold of Chief Bowlegs, who often made raids on the planters and carried off their stock, and even negroes. United States troops were in the vicinity, but so sudden and swift were the raids of Bowlegs that he often got off scott-free with his booty. On one occasion he made a sudden dash upon the plantation of Dr. Braden. It was at night, and the family were at the supper table, Lucinda waiting upon them. In passing from the kitchen to the dining room she discovered the Indians in the orange orchard creeping towards the house. The master was at once informed, who had every light extinguished, and seizing his gun approached a window and opened fire on them. They returned the fire and yelled considerably, but finally drew off, with Bowlegs badly wounded, having an arm shattered by a ball. They could not easily burn the doctor's house, as it was constructed of concrete and oyster shells. Before leaving the place the Seminoles took all of the horses in the lots, making the negroes bring them out, and carried off as many other things as they could,

including nearly all of the negroes, especially the women, whom they intended as wives for the Indians. Lucinda escaped this captivity on account of being at the big house, but one of her children and one of her sisters were with the unfortunate lot. The child cried so much the Indians came near killing it several times during the retreat. The Indians had a river to cross, but were supplied with a great amount of rawhide boats which they came over in, and had concealed. The soldiers, however, had been notified, and were on their trail, and came upon them before they reached the boats. A running fight ensued, but the Seminoles scattered and abandoned all of their stolen property. Only one Indian was killed, but the soldiers took off his scalp and brought it back. All of the negroes and horses were brought back, and the shouting and "glorying to God" on account of the deliverance of the captives by the other negroes left at the plantation was wonderful to listen to. Although this was the last raid "Billy Bowlegs" made in that locality, Dr. Braden sold out on that account, and moved to Georgia. He died there, and the Widow Braden then came with her negroes to Texas, and settled in Fort Bend County, afraid to go back to Florida. Old "Aunt Lucinda" was greatly pleased to think that the white folks were interested in her recollections of "Billy Bowlegs," when the writer and Judge Oatis Fenn went to interview her. She owns the little farm on which she lives. "Yes," she says, "dis is de reason dat I am here now in Texas, all on 'count of 'Billy Bowlegs.' I ain't no Texas nigger, no suh; I'm Florida nigger."

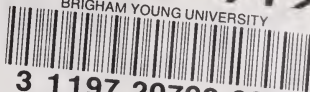
THE END.







BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY



3 1197 20702 0378



